



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

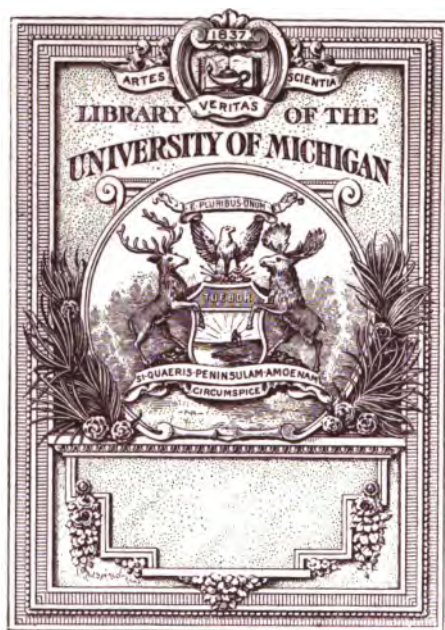
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

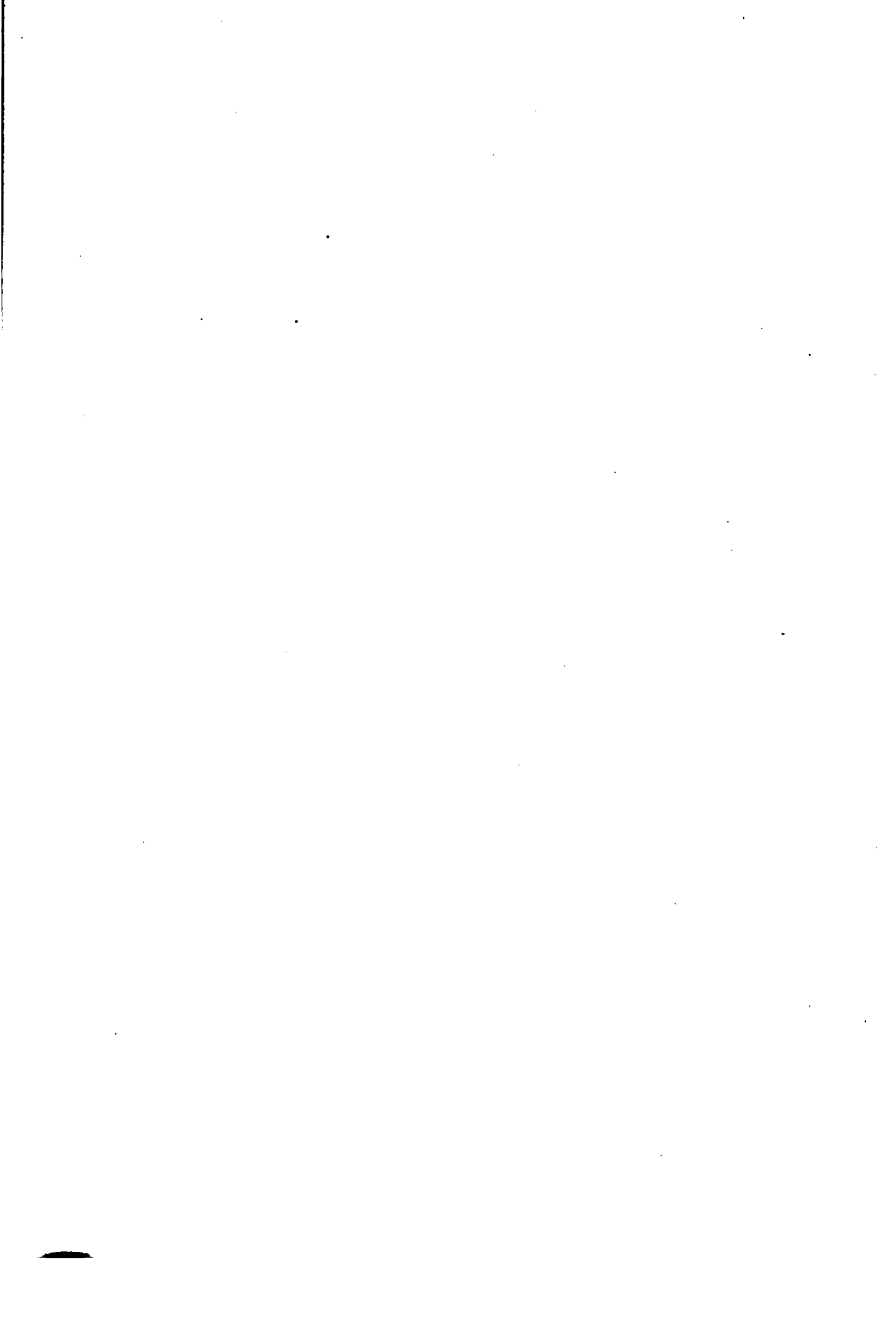
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

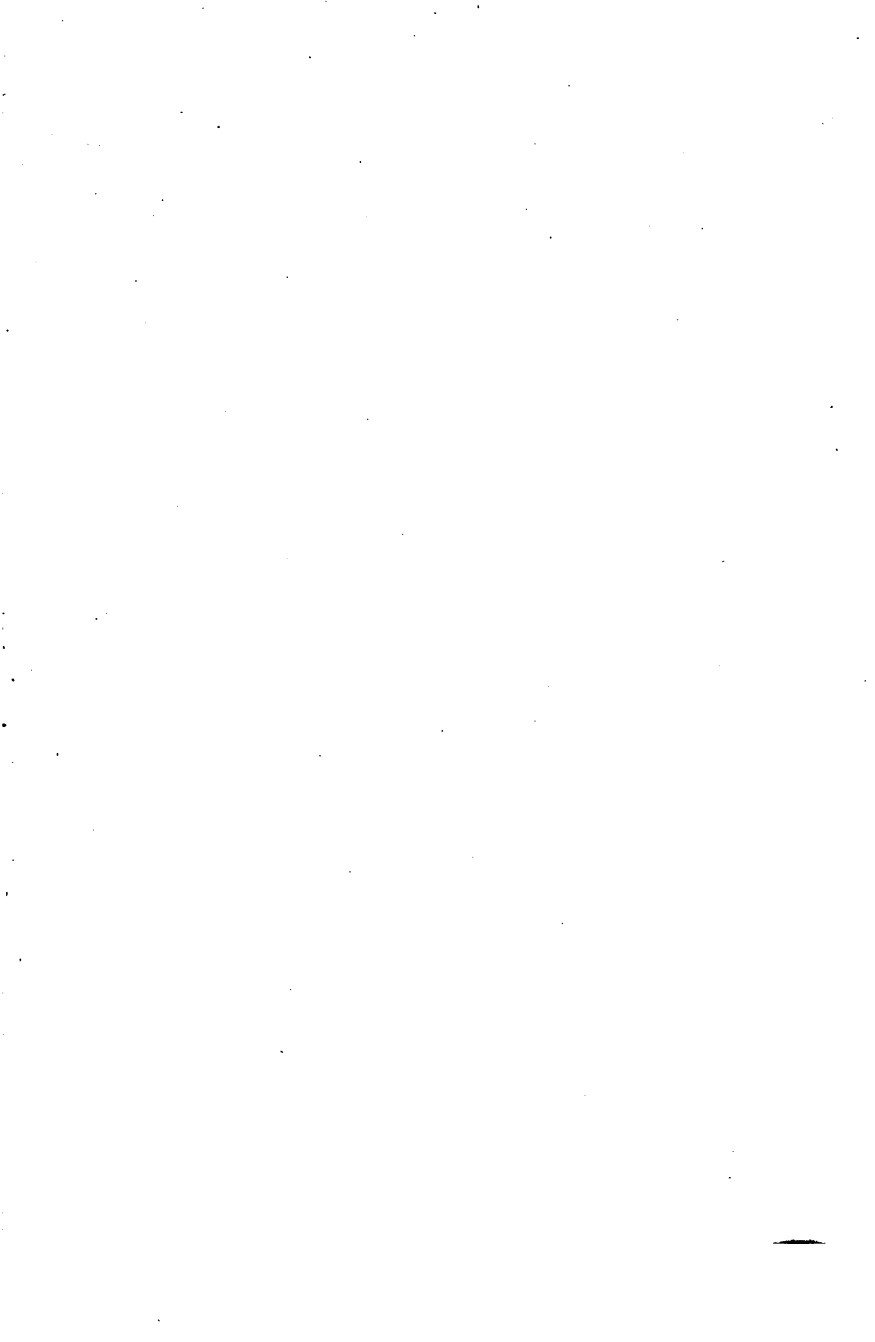
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>











NOVELS  
OF  
SIR EDWARD BULWER LYTTON

---

Library Edition

---

NOVELS OF LIFE AND MANNERS

VOL. X.





W701



The stranger opened the door of the chaise.

*Night and Morning, I. 8.*



# NIGHT AND MORNING.

BY

EDWARD BULWER LYTTON

(*LORD LYTTON.*)

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

BOSTON:  
LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY.

1894.

*Copyright, 1893,*  
**BY LITTLE, BROWN, AND COMPANY.**

**UNIVERSITY PRESS:**  
**JOHN WILSON AND SON, CAMBRIDGE.**

0229p088.5.

TO THE  
RIGHT HONORABLE C. T. D'EYNCOURT, M.P.

*This Work,*

IN PART COMPOSED UNDER HIS HOSPITABLE ROOF,

IS DEDICATED,

AS A SLIGHT MEMORIAL OF AFFECTIONATE FRIENDSHIP AND  
SINCERE ESTEEM.

KNEBWORTH, 1845.





## PREFACE TO THE EDITION OF 1845.

---

MUCH has been written by critics, especially by those in Germany (the native land of criticism), upon the important question, whether to please or to instruct should be the end of fiction, — whether a moral purpose is or is not in harmony with the undidactic spirit perceptible in the higher works of the imagination: and the general result of the discussion has been in favor of those who have contended that moral design, rigidly so called, should be excluded from the aims of the poet; that his art should regard only the beautiful, and be contented with the indirect moral *tendencies*, which can never fail the creation of the beautiful. Certainly, in fiction, to interest, to please, and sportively to elevate; to take man from the low passions, and the miserable troubles of life, into a higher region; to beguile weary and selfish pain; to excite a generous sorrow at vicissitudes not his own; to raise the passions into sympathy with heroic struggles; and to admit the soul into that serener atmosphere from which it rarely returns to ordinary existence, without some memory or association which ought to enlarge the domain of thought and exalt

---

the motives of action, — such, without other moral result or object, may satisfy the poet,<sup>1</sup> and constitute the highest and most universal morality he can effect. But, subordinate to this, which is not the duty, but the *necessity* of all fiction that outlasts the hour, the writer of imagination may well permit to himself other purposes and objects, taking care that they be not too sharply defined, and too obviously meant to contract the poet into the lecturer, — the fiction into the homily. The delight in “Shylock” is not less vivid for the humanity it latently but profoundly inculcates; the healthful merriment of the “Tartuffe” is not less enjoyed for the exposure of the hypocrisy it denounces. We need not demand from Shakespeare or from Molière other morality than that which genius unconsciously throws around it, — the natural light which it reflects; but, if some great principle which guides us practically in the daily intercourse with men becomes in the general lustre more clear and more pronounced, we gain doubly, by the general tendency and the particular result.

Long since, in searching for new regions in the art to which I am a servant, it seemed to me that they might be found lying far, and rarely trodden, beyond that range of conventional morality in which novelist after novelist had intrenched himself, — amongst those subtle recesses in the ethics of human life in which truth and falsehood dwell undisturbed and unseparated. The vast and dark poetry around us — the poetry of

<sup>1</sup> I use the word poet in its proper sense, as applicable to any writer, whether in verse or prose, who invents or creates.

modern civilization and daily existence—is shut out from us in much, by the shadowy giants of prejudice and fear. He who would arrive at the Fairy Land, must face the phantoms. Betimes I set myself to the task of investigating the motley world which our progress in humanity has attained, caring little what misrepresentation I incurred, what hostility I provoked, in searching through a devious labyrinth for the foot-tracks of truth.

In the pursuit of this object, I am, not vainly, conscious that I have had my influence on my time, — that I have contributed, though humbly and indirectly, to the benefits which public opinion has extorted from governments and laws. While (to content myself with a single example) the ignorant or malicious were decrying the moral of “Paul Clifford,” I consoled myself with perceiving that its truths had stricken deep, — that many, whom formal essays might not reach, were enlisted by the picture and the popular force of fiction into the service of that large and catholic humanity which frankly examines into the causes of crime, which ameliorates the ills of society by seeking to amend the circumstances by which they are occasioned, and commences the great work of justice to mankind, by proportioning the punishment to the offence. That work, I know, had its share in the wise and great relaxation of our criminal code; it has had its share in results yet more valuable, because leading to more comprehensive reforms,—namely, in the courageous facing of the ills which the mock decorum of timidity would shun to contemplate, but which,

till fairly fronted, in the spirit of practical Christianity, sap daily, more and more, the walls in which blind indolence would protect itself from restless misery and rampant hunger. For it is not till art has told the unthinking that nothing (*rightly treated*) is too low for its breath to vivify, and its wings to raise, that the herd awakes from their chronic lethargy of contempt, and the lawgiver is compelled to redress what the poet has lifted into esteem. In thus enlarging the boundaries of the novelist, from trite and conventional to untrodden ends, I have seen, not with the jealousy of an author, but with the pride of an originator, that I have served as a guide to later and abler writers, both in England and abroad. If at times, while imitating, they have mistaken me, I am not answerable for their errors; or if, more often, they have improved where they borrowed, I am not envious of their laurels. They owe me at least this, that I prepared the way for their reception, and that they would have been less popular and more misrepresented, if the outcry which bursts upon the first researches into new directions, had not exhausted its noisy vehemence upon me.

In this novel of "Night and Morning" I have had various ends in view,—subordinate, I grant to the higher and more durable morality which belongs to the ideal, and instructs us playfully while it interests, in the passions, and through the heart. First: to deal fearlessly with that universal unsoundness in social justice which makes distinctions so marked and iniquitous between vice and crime, — namely, between the corrupting

habits and the violent act, which scarce touches the former with the lightest twig in the fasces, which lifts against the latter the edge of the lictor's axe. Let a child steal an apple in sport, let a starveling steal a roll in despair, and law conducts them to the prison, for evil commune to mellow them for the gibbet. But let a man spend one apprenticeship from youth to old age in vice; let him devote a fortune, perhaps colossal, to the wholesale demoralization of his kind, — and he may be surrounded with the adulation of the so-called virtuous, and be served upon its knee by that lackey, the modern world! I say not that law can, or that law should reach the vice as it does the crime; but I say that opinion may be more than the servile shadow of law. I impress not here, as in "Paul Clifford," a material moral to work its effect on the journals, at the hustings, through constituents, and on legislation: I direct myself to a channel less active, more tardy, but as sure, — to the conscience that reigns, elder and superior to all law, in men's hearts and souls; I utter boldly and loudly a truth, if not all untold, murmured feebly and falteringly before, — sooner or later it will find its way into the judgment and the conduct, and shape out a tribunal which requires not robe or ermine.

Secondly: In this work I have sought to lift the mask from the timid selfishness which too often with us bears the name of *respectability*. Purposely avoiding all attraction that may savor of extravagance, patiently subduing every tone and every hue to the aspect of those whom we meet daily in our thoroughfares, I have shown

in Robert Beaufort the man of decorous phrase and bloodless action, — the systematic self-server, — in whom the world forgive the lack of all that is generous, warm, and noble, in order to respect the passive acquiescence in methodical conventions and hollow forms. And how common such men are with us in this century, and how inviting and how necessary their delineation may be seen in this, — that the popular and pre-eminent observer of the age in which we live has since placed their prototype in vigorous colors upon imperishable canvas.<sup>1</sup>

There is yet another object with which I have identified my tale. I trust that I am not insensible to such advantages as arise from the diffusion of education really sound, and knowledge really available; for these, as the right of my countrymen, I have contended always. But of late years there has been danger that what ought to be an important truth may be perverted into a pestilent fallacy. Whether for rich or for poor, disappointment must ever await the endeavor to give knowledge without labor, and experience without trial. Cheap literature and popular treatises do not in themselves suffice to fit the nerves of man for the strife below, and lift his aspirations in healthful confidence above. He who seeks to divorce toil from knowledge, deprives knowledge of its most valuable property, — the strengthening of the mind by exercise. We learn what really braces and elevates us only in proportion to the *effort* it costs us. Nor is it in books alone, nor in books chiefly, that we are made

<sup>1</sup> Need I say that I allude to the "Pecksniff" of Mr. Dickens?

conscious of our strength as men; life is the great school-master, experience the mighty volume. He who has made one stern sacrifice of self, has acquired more than he will ever glean from the odds-and-ends of popular philosophy; and the man the least scholastic, may be more robust in the power that is knowledge, and approach nearer to the Arch-Seraphim, than Bacon himself, if he cling fast to two simple maxims, "Be honest in temptation, and in adversity believe in God." Such moral, attempted before in "Eugene Aram," I have enforced more directly here; and out of such convictions I have created hero and heroine, placing them in their primitive and natural characters, with aid more from life than books, — from courage the one, from affection the other, — amidst the feeble Hermaphrodites of our sickly civilization, examples of resolute manhood and tender womanhood.

The opinions I have here put forth are not in fashion at this day. But I have never consulted the popular, any more than the sectarian prejudice. Alone and unaided, I have hewn out my way, from first to last, by the force of my own convictions. The corn springs up in the field centuries after the first sower is forgotten. Works may perish with the workman; but, if truthful, their results are in the works of others, imitating, borrowing, enlarging, and improving, in the everlasting cycle of industry and thought.





## NOTE TO THE EDITION OF 1851.

---

I HAVE nothing to add to the preceding pages, written six years ago, as to the objects and aims of this work, except to say, and by no means as a boast, that the work lays claims to one kind of interest which I certainly never desired to effect for it, — namely, in exemplifying the glorious uncertainty of the law. For, humbly aware of the blunders which novelists not belonging to the legal profession are apt to commit, when they summon to the *dénouement* of a plot the aid of a deity so mysterious as Themis, I submitted to an eminent lawyer the whole case of “Beaufort *versus* Beaufort,” as it stands in this novel. And the pages which refer to that suit were not only written from the opinion annexed to the brief I sent in, but submitted to the eye of my counsel, and revised by his pen.— N. B. He was fee’d. Judge then my dismay when I heard long afterwards that the late Mr. O’Connell disputed the soundness of the law I had thus bought and paid for! “Who shall decide when doctors disagree?” All I can say is, that I took the best opinion that love or money could get me: and I should add that my lawyer, unawed by the alleged *ipse dixit* of the great Agitator (to be sure, he is dead), still

stoutly maintains his own views of the question.<sup>1</sup> Let me hope that the right heir will live long enough to come under the statute of limitations. Possession is nine points of the law, and may time give the tenth.

KNEBworth.

<sup>1</sup> I have, however, thought it prudent so far to meet the objection suggested by Mr. O'Connell, as to make a slight alteration in this edition, which will probably prevent the objection, if correct, being of any material practical effect on the disposition of that visionary El Dorado, — the Beaufort property.

## BOOK I.

Noch in meines Lebens Lenze  
War ich und ich wandert' aus,  
Und der Jugend frohe Tänze  
Ließ ich in des Vaters Haus.

SCHILLER, *Der Pilgrim.*



# NIGHT AND MORNING.

---

## BOOK I. — INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER.

Now rests our vicar. They who knew him best,  
Proclaim his life to have been entirely rest ;  
Nor one so old has left this world of sin,  
More like the being that he entered in.

CRABBE.

IN one of the Welsh counties is a small village called A——. It is somewhat removed from the highroad, and is, therefore, but little known to those luxurious amateurs of the picturesque who view nature through the windows of a carriage-and-four. Nor, indeed, is there anything, whether of scenery or association, in the place itself, sufficient to allure the more sturdy enthusiast from the beaten tracks which tourists and guide-books prescribe to those who search the sublime and beautiful amidst the mountain homes of the ancient Britons. Still, on the whole, the village is not without its attractions. It is placed in a small valley, through which winds and leaps, down many a rocky fall, a clear, babbling, noisy rivulet, that affords excellent sport to the brethren of the angle. Thither, accordingly, in the summer season occasionally resort the Waltons of the neighborhood, — young farmers, retired traders, with now and then a stray artist, or a roving student from one of the universi-

---

ties. Hence the solitary hostelry of A——, being somewhat more frequented, is also more clean and comfortable than could be reasonably anticipated from the insignificance and remoteness of the village.

At a time in which my narrative opens, the village boasted a sociable, agreeable, careless, half-starved parson, who never failed to introduce himself to any of the anglers who, during the summer months, passed a day or two in the little valley. The Rev. Mr. Caleb Price had been educated at the University of Cambridge, where he had contrived, in three years, to run through a little fortune of £3500. It is true that he acquired in return the art of making milk-punch, the science of pugilism, and the reputation of one of the best-natured, rattling, open-hearted companions whom you could desire by your side in a tandem to Newmarket or in a row with the barge-men. By the help of these gifts and accomplishments he had not failed to find favor, while his money lasted, with the young aristocracy of the "Gentle Mother." And, though the very reverse of an ambitious or calculating man, he had certainly nourished the belief that some one of the hats or tinsel gowns, — that is, young lords, or fellow-commoners, — with whom he was on such excellent terms, and who supped with him so often, would do something for him in the way of a living. But it so happened that when Mr. Caleb Price had, with a little difficulty, scrambled through his degree, and found himself a Bachelor of Arts and at the end of his finances, his grand acquaintances parted from him to their various posts in the state-militant of life. And, with the exception of one, joyous and reckless as himself, Mr. Caleb Price found that when money makes itself wings, it flies away with our friends. As poor Price had earned no academical distinction, so he could expect no advance-

ment from his college, no fellowship, no tutorship, leading hereafter to livings, stalls, and deaneries. Poverty began already to stare him in the face, when the only friend who, having shared his prosperity, remained true to his adverse fate, — a friend, fortunately for him, of high connections and brilliant prospects, — succeeded in obtaining for him the humble living of A——. To this primitive spot the once jovial roister cheerfully retired; contrived to live contented upon an income somewhat less than he had formerly given to his groom; preached very short sermons to a very scanty and ignorant congregation, some of whom only understood Welsh; did good to the poor and sick in his own careless, slovenly way, — and, uncheered or unvexed by wife and children, he rose in summer with the lark, and in winter went to bed at nine precisely, to save coals and candles. For the rest, he was the most skilful angler in the whole county; and so willing to communicate the results of his experience as to the most taking color of the flies, and the most favored haunts of the trout, that he had given especial orders at the inn, that whenever any strange gentleman came to fish, Mr. Caleb Price should be immediately sent for. In this, to be sure, our worthy pastor had his usual recompense. First, if the stranger were tolerably liberal, Mr. Price was asked to dinner at the inn; and, secondly, if this failed, from the poverty or the churlishness of the obliged party, Mr. Price still had an opportunity to hear the last news, to talk about the great world, — in a word, to exchange ideas, and perhaps to get an old newspaper or an odd number of a magazine.

Now it so happened that one afternoon in October, when the periodical excursions of the anglers, becoming gradually rarer and more rare, had altogether ceased, Mr. Caleb Price was summoned from his parlor, in which he

had been employed in the fabrication of a net for his cabbages, by a little white-headed boy, who came to say there was a gentleman at the inn who wished immediately to see him, — a strange gentleman who had never been there before.

Mr. Price threw down his net, seized his hat, and in less than five minutes he was in the best room of the little inn.

The person there awaiting him was a man who, though plainly clad in a velveteen shooting-jacket, had an air and mien greatly above those common to the pedestrian visitors of A——. He was tall, and one of those athletic forms in which vigor in youth is too often followed by corpulence in age. At this period, however, in the full prime of manhood, the ample chest and sinewy limbs — seen to full advantage in their simple and manly dress — could not fail to excite that popular admiration which is always given to strength in the one sex as to delicacy in the other. The stranger was walking impatiently to and fro the small apartment when Mr. Price entered; and then, turning to the clergyman a countenance handsome and striking, but yet more prepossessing from its expression of frankness than from the regularity of its features, he stopped short, held out his hand, and said, with a gay laugh, as he glanced over the parson's threadbare and slovenly costume, "My poor Caleb! — what a metamorphosis! I should not have known you again!"

"What! *you*! Is it possible, my dear fellow? — how glad I am to see you! What on earth can bring you to such a place! No! not a soul would believe me if I said I had seen you in this miserable hole."

"That is precisely the reason why I am here. Sit down, Caleb, and we'll talk over matters as soon as our landlord has brought up the materials for —"



"The milk-punch," interrupted Mr. Price, rubbing his hands. "Ah, that will bring us back to old times, indeed!"

In a few minutes the punch was prepared, and after two or three preparatory glasses, the stranger thus commenced:—

"My dear Caleb, I am in want of your assistance, and, above all, of your secrecy."

"I promise you both beforehand. It will make me happy the rest of my life to think I have served my patron, my benefactor,—the only friend I possess."

"Tush, man! don't talk of that: we shall do better for you one of these days. But now to the point: I have come here to be married,—married, old boy! married!"

And the stranger threw himself back in his chair, and chuckled with the glee of a schoolboy.

"Humph!" said the parson, gravely. "It is a serious thing to do, and a very odd place to come to."

"I admit both propositions: this punch is superb. To proceed. You know that my uncle's immense fortune is at his own disposal; if I disoblige him, he would be capable of leaving all to my brother; I *should* disoblige him irrevocably if he knew that I had married a tradesman's daughter; I am going to marry a tradesman's daughter,—a girl in a million!—the ceremony must be as secret as possible. And in this church, with you for the priest, I do not see a chance of discovery."

"Do you marry by license?"

"No, my intended is not of age; and we keep the secret even from her father. In this village you will mumble over the banns without one of your congregation ever taking heed of the name. I shall stay here a month for the purpose. She is in London, on a visit to a rela-

tion in the city. The banns on her side will be published with equal privacy in a little church near the Tower, where my name will be no less unknown than here. Oh, I've contrived it famously!"

"But, my dear fellow, consider what you risk."

"I have considered all, and I find every chance in my favor. The bride will arrive here on the day of our wedding: my servant will be one witness; some stupid old Welshman, as antediluvian as possible, — I leave it to you to select him, — shall be the other. My servant I shall dispose of, and the rest I can depend on."

"But —"

"I detest buts; if I had to make a language, I would not admit such a word in it. And now, before I run on about Catherine, a subject quite inexhaustible, tell me, my dear friend, something about yourself."

Somewhat more than a month had elapsed since the arrival of the stranger at the village inn. He had changed his quarters for the parsonage, — went out but little, and then chiefly on foot excursions among the sequestered hills in the neighborhood: he was therefore but partially known by sight, even in the village; and the visit of some old college friend to the minister, though indeed it had never chanced before, was not in itself so remarkable an event as to excite any particular observation. The banns had been duly, and half audibly, hurried over, after the service was concluded, and, while the scanty congregation were dispersing down the little aisle of the church, when one morning a chaise and pair arrived at the parsonage. A servant out of livery leaped from the box. The stranger opened the door of the chaise, and, uttering a joyous exclamation, gave his arm to a lady, who, trembling and agitated, could scarcely,

even with that stalwart support, descend the steps. "Ah!" she said, in a voice choked with tears, when they found themselves alone in the little parlor, — "ah! if you knew how I have suffered!"

How is it that certain words, and those the homeliest, — which the hand writes and the eye reads as trite and commonplace expressions, — when *spoken*, convey so much, so many meanings complicated and refined? "Ah! if you knew how I have suffered!"

When the lover heard these words, his gay countenance fell; he drew back, — his conscience smote him: in that complaint was the whole history of a clandestine love, not for both the parties, but for the woman; the painful secrecy, the remorseful deceit, the shame, the fear, the sacrifice. She who uttered those words was scarcely sixteen. It is an early age to leave childhood behind forever!

"My own love! you have suffered, indeed; but it is over now."

"Over! And what will they say of me, what will they think of me, *at home*? Over! Ah!"

"It is but for a short time! in the course of nature my uncle cannot live long: all then will be explained. Our marriage once made public, all connected with you will be proud to own you. You will have wealth, station, — a name among the first in the gentry of England. But, above all, you will have the happiness to think that your forbearance for a time has saved me — and, it may be, our children, sweet one! — from poverty and —"

"It is enough," interrupted the girl; and the expression of her countenance became serene and elevated. "It is for you, — for your sake. I know what you hazard: how much I must owe you! Forgive me; this is the last murmur you shall ever hear from these lips."

An hour after these words were spoken, the marriage ceremony was concluded.

"Caleb," said the bridegroom, drawing the clergyman aside as they were about to re-enter the house, "you will keep your promise, I know; and you think I may depend implicitly upon the good faith of the witness you have selected?"

"Upon his good faith?—no," said Caleb, smiling; "but upon his deafness, his ignorance, and his age. My poor old clerk! he will have forgotten all about it before this day three months. Now I have seen your lady, I no longer wonder that you incur so great a risk. I never beheld so lovely a countenance. You will be happy." And the village priest sighed, and thought of the coming winter and his own lonely hearth.

"My dear friend, you have only seen her beauty,—it is her least charm. Heaven knows how often I have made love; and this is the only woman I have ever really loved. Caleb, there is an excellent living that adjoins my uncle's house. The rector is old; when the house is mine, you will not be long without the living. We shall be neighbors, Caleb, and then you shall try and find a bride for yourself. Smith,"—and the bridegroom turned to the servant who had accompanied his wife, and served as a second witness to the marriage,— "tell the postboy to put-to the horses immediately."

"Yes, sir. May I speak a word with you?"

"Well, what?"

"Your uncle, sir, sent for me to come to him, the day before we left town."

"Aha!—indeed!"

"And I could just pick up among his servants that he had some suspicion; at least, that he had been making inquiries,—and seemed very cross, sir."

"You went to him?"

"No, sir, I was afraid. He has such a way with him: whenever his eye is fixed on mine, I always feel as if it was impossible to tell a lie; and—and—in short, I thought it was best not to go."

"You did right. Confound this fellow!" muttered the bridegroom, turning away; "he is honest, and loves me: yet, if my uncle sees him, he is clumsy enough to betray all. Well, I always meant to get him out of the way, — the sooner the better. Smith!"

"Yes, sir!"

"You have often said that you should like, if you had some capital, to settle in Australia. Your father is an excellent farmer; you are above the situation you hold with me; you are well educated, and have some knowledge of agriculture; you can scarcely fail to make a fortune as a settler; and, if you are of the same mind still, why, look you, I have just £1000 at my banker's: you shall have half, if you like to sail by the first packet."

"Oh, sir, you are too generous."

"Nonsense; no thanks, — I am more prudent than generous; for I agree with you that it is all up with me if my uncle gets hold of you. I dread my prying brother, too; in fact, the obligation is on my side: only stay abroad till I am a rich man, and my marriage made public, and then you may ask of me what you will. It's agreed, then; order the horses, we'll go round by Liverpool, and learn about the vessels. By the way, my good fellow, I hope you see nothing now of that good-for-nothing brother of yours?"

"No, indeed, sir. It's a thousand pities he has turned out so ill; for he was the cleverest of the family, and could always twist me round his little finger."

"That's the very reason I mentioned him. If he learned our secret, he would take it to an excellent market. Where is he?"

"Hiding, I suspect, sir."

"Well, we shall put the sea between you and him! So now all's safe."

Caleb stood by the porch of his house as the bride and bridegroom entered their humble vehicle. Though then November, the day was exquisitely mild and calm, the sky without a cloud, and even the leafless trees seemed to smile beneath the cheerful sun. And the young bride wept no more; she was with him she loved,—she was his forever. She forgot the rest. The hope, the heart, of sixteen spoke brightly out through the blushes that mantled over her fair cheeks. The bridegroom's frank and manly countenance was radiant with joy. As he waved his hand to Caleb from the window, the postboy cracked his whip, the servant settled himself on the dicky, the horses started off in a brisk trot,—the clergyman was left alone!

To be married is certainly an event in life; to marry other people is, for a priest, a very ordinary occurrence; and yet, from that day, a great change began to operate in the spirits and the habits of Caleb Price. Have you ever, my gentle reader, buried yourself for some time quietly in the lazy ease of a dull country life; have you ever become gradually accustomed to its monotony, and inured to its solitude; and, just at the time when you have half forgotten the great world,—that *mare magnum* that frets and roars in the distance,—have you ever received, in your calm retreat, some visitor full of the busy and excited life which you imagined yourself contented to relinquish? If so, have you not perceived, that in proportion as his presence and communication

either revived old memories or brought before you new pictures of "the bright tumult" of that existence of which your guest made a part, you began to compare him curiously with yourself; you began to feel that what before was to rest is now to rot; that your years are gliding from you unenjoyed and wasted; that the contrast between the animal life of passionate civilization and the vegetable torpor of motionless seclusion is one that, if you are still young, it tasks your philosophy to bear,—feeling all the while that the torpor may be yours to your grave! And, when your guest has left you, when you are again alone, is the solitude the same as it was before?

Our poor Caleb had for years rooted his thoughts to his village. His guest had been, like the bird in the fairy tale, settling upon the quiet branches, and singing so loudly and so gladly of the enchanted skies afar, that, when it flew away, the tree pined, nipped and withering in the sober sun in which before it had basked contented. The guest was, indeed, one of those men whose animal spirits exercise upon such as come within their circle the influence and power usually ascribed only to intellectual qualities. During the month he had sojourned with Caleb, he had brought back to the poor parson all the gayety of the brisk and noisy novitiate that preceded the solemn vow and the dull retreat,—the social parties, the merry suppers, the open-handed, open-hearted fellowship of riotous, delightful, extravagant, thoughtless youth. And Caleb was not a book-man,—not a scholar; he had no resources in himself, no occupation but his indolent and ill-paid duties. The emotions, therefore, of the active man were easily aroused within him. But if this comparison between his past and present life rendered him restless and disturbed,

how much more deeply and lastingly was he affected by a contrast between his own future and that of his friend! — not in those points where he could never hope equality, wealth and station, the conventional distinctions to which, after all, a man of ordinary sense must sooner or later reconcile himself; but in that *one* respect wherein all, high and low, pretend to the same rights: rights which a man of moderate warmth of feeling can never willingly renounce, — namely, a partner in a lot, however obscure; a kind face by a hearth, no matter how mean it be! And his happier friend, like all men full of life, was full of himself, — full of his love, of his future, of the blessings of home and wife and children. Then, too, the young bride seemed so fair, so confiding, and so tender, so formed to grace the noblest or to cheer the humblest home! And both were so happy, so all in all each to each other, as they left that barren threshold! And the priest felt all this, as, melancholy and envious, he turned from the door on that November day, to find himself thoroughly alone. He now began seriously to muse upon those fancied blessings which men wearied with celibacy see springing heavenward behind the altar. A few weeks afterwards a notable change was visible in the good man's exterior. He became more careful of his dress, he shaved every morning, he purchased a crop-eared Welsh cob; and it was soon known in the neighborhood that the only journey the cob was ever condemned to take was to the house of a certain squire, who, amidst a family of all ages, boasted two very pretty marriageable daughters. That was the second holiday-time of poor Caleb, — the love-romance of his life: it soon closed. On learning the amount of the pastor's stipend the squire refused to receive his addresses; and, shortly after, the girl to whom he had attached himself



made what the world calls a happy match: and perhaps it was one, for I never heard that she regretted the forsaken lover. Probably Caleb was not one of those whose place in a woman's heart is never to be supplied. The lady married, the world went round as before, the brook danced as merrily through the village, the poor worked on the week-days, and the urchins gambolled round the gravestones on the Sabbath, — and the pastor's heart was broken. He languished gradually and silently away. The villagers observed that he had lost his old good-humored smile; that he did not stop every Saturday evening at the carrier's gate to ask if there were any news stirring in the town which the carrier weekly visited; that he did not come to borrow the stray newspapers that now and then found their way into the village; that, as he sauntered along the brook-side, his clothes hung loose on his limbs, and that he no longer "whistled as he went;" alas, he was no longer "in want of thought"! By degrees the walks themselves were suspended; the parson was no longer visible: a stranger performed his duties.

One day, — it might be some three years and more after the fatal visit I have commemorated, — one very wild, rough day in early March, the postman who made the round of the district rang at the parson's bell. The single female servant, her red hair loose on her neck, replied to the call.

"And how is the master?"

"Very bad;" and the girl wiped her eyes.

"He should leave you something handsome," remarked the postman, kindly, as he pocketed the money for the letter.

The pastor was in bed, — the boisterous wind rattled down the chimney and shook the ill-fitting casement in

its rotting frame. The clothes he had last worn were thrown carelessly about, unsmoothed, unbrushed; the scanty articles of furniture were out of their proper places: slovenly discomfort marked the death-chamber. And by the bedside stood a neighboring clergyman, a stout, rustic, homely, thoroughly Welsh priest, who might have sat for the portrait of Parson Adams.

"Here 's a letter for you," said the visitor.

"For me!" echoed Caleb, feebly. "Ah, — well: is it not very dark, or are my eyes failing?" The clergyman and the servant drew aside the curtains, and propped the sick man up; he read as follows, slowly, and with difficulty: —

DEAR CALEB, — At last I can do something for you. A friend of mine has a living in his gift just vacant, worth, I understand, from three to four hundred a year: pleasant neighborhood, — small parish; and my friend keeps the hounds! — just the thing for you. He is, however, a very particular sort of person, — wants a companion, and has a horror of anything evangelical; wishes, therefore, to see you before he decides. If you can meet me in London, some day next month, I'll present you to him, and I have no doubt it will be settled. You must think it strange I never wrote to you since we parted, but you know I never was a very good correspondent; and as I had nothing to communicate advantageous to you, I thought it a sort of insult to enlarge on my own happiness, and so forth. All I shall say on that score is, that I've sown my wild oats; and that you may take my word for it, there 's nothing that can make a man know how large the heart is, and how little the world, till he comes home (perhaps after a hard day's hunting) and sees his own fireside, and hears one dear welcome; and — oh, by the way, Caleb, if you could but see my boy, the sturdiest little rogue! But enough of this. All that vexes me is, that I've never yet been able to declare my marriage: my uncle, however, suspects nothing; my wife bears up against all, like an angel as she is; still, in case of any

accident, it occurs to me, now I'm writing to you, especially if you leave the place, that it may be as well to send me an examined copy of the register. In those remote places registers are often lost or mislaid; and it may be useful hereafter, when I proclaim the marriage, to clear up all doubt as to the fact. — Good-by, old fellow,

Yours most truly, etc., etc.

"It comes too late," sighed Caleb, heavily; and the letter fell from his hands. There was a long pause. "Close the shutters," said the sick man, at last; "I think I could sleep: and — and — pick up that letter."

With a trembling but eager gripe he seized the paper, as a miser would seize the deeds of an estate on which he has a mortgage. He smoothed the folds, looked complacently at the well-known hand, smiled, — a ghastly smile! — and then placed the letter under his pillow, and sank down: they left him alone. He did not wake for some hours, and that good clergyman, poor as himself, was again at his post. The only friendships that are really with us in the hour of need, are those which are cemented by equality of circumstance. In the depth of home, in the hour of tribulation, by the bed of death, the rich and the poor are seldom found side by side. Caleb was evidently much feebler; but his sense seemed clearer than it had been, and the instincts of his native kindness were the last that left him. "There is something he wants me to do for him," he muttered. "Ah! I remember: Jones, will you send for the parish register? It is somewhere in the vestry-room, I think, — but nothing's kept properly. Better go yourself, — 't is important."

Mr. Jones nodded, and sallied forth. The register was not in the vestry; the churchwardens knew nothing about it; the clerk — a new clerk — who was also the

sexton, and rather a wild fellow — had gone ten miles off to a wedding: every place was searched; till, at last, the book was found, amidst a heap of old magazines and dusty papers, in the parlor of Caleb himself. By the time it was brought to him, the sufferer was fast declining; with some difficulty his dim eye discovered the place where, amidst the clumsy pot-hooks of the parishioners, the large, clear hand of his old friend, and the trembling characters of the bride, looked forth, distinguished.

“Extract this for me, will you?” said Caleb.

Mr. Jones obeyed.

“Now just write above the extract,” —

SIR, — By Mr. Price’s desire I send you the enclosed. He is too ill to write himself. But he bids me say, that he has never been quite the same man since you left him; and that, if he should not get well again, still your kind letter has made him easier in his mind.

Caleb stopped.

“Go on.”

“That is all I have to say: sign your name, and put the address, — here it is. Ah, the letter,” he muttered, “must not lie about! If anything happen to me, it may get him into trouble.”

And as Mr. Jones sealed his communication, Caleb feebly stretched his wan hand, and held the letter which had “come too late” over the flame of the candle. As the blazing paper dropped on the carpetless floor, Mr. Jones prudently set thereon the broad sole of his top-boot, and the maid-servant brushed the tinder into the grate.

“Ah, trample it out: hurry it amongst the ashes. The last as the rest,” said Caleb, hoarsely. “Friend-

ship, fortune, hope, love, life, — a little flame, and then — and then — ”

“ Don’t be uneasy, — it’s quite out! ” said Mr. Jones.

Caleb turned his face to the wall. He lingered till the next day, when he passed insensibly from sleep to death. As soon as the breath was out of his body, Mr. Jones felt that his duty was discharged, that other duties called him home. He promised to return to read the burial-service over the deceased, gave some hasty orders about the plain funeral, and was turning from the room, when he saw the letter he had written by Caleb’s wish, still on the table. “ I pass the post-office, — I’ll put it in,” said he to the weeping servant; “ and just give me that scrap of paper.” So he wrote on the scrap, “ P. S. He died this morning, at half-past twelve, without pain. — M. J. ; ” and, not taking the trouble to break the seal, thrust the final bulletin into the folds of the letter, which he then carefully placed in his vast pocket, and safely transferred to the post. And that was all that the jovial and happy man, to whom the letter was addressed, ever heard of the last days of his college friend.

The living vacant by the death of Caleb Price was not so valuable as to plague the patron with many applications. It continued vacant nearly the whole of the six months prescribed by law. And the desolate parsonage was committed to the charge of one of the villagers, who had occasionally assisted Caleb in the care of his little garden. The villager, his wife, and half-a-dozen noisy, ragged children, took possession of the quiet bachelor’s abode. The furniture had been sold to pay the expenses of the funeral, and a few trifling bills; and, save the kitchen and the two attics, the empty house, uninhabited, was surrendered to the sportive

mischievous of the idle urchins, who prowled about the silent chambers in fear of the silence, and in ecstasy at the space. The bedroom in which Caleb had died was, indeed, long held sacred by infantine superstition. But one day, the eldest boy having ventured across the threshold, two cupboards, the doors standing ajar, attracted the child's curiosity. He opened one, and his exclamation soon brought the rest of the children round him. Have you ever, reader, when a boy, suddenly stumbled on that *El Dorado*, called by the grown-up folks a lumber-room? Lumber, indeed! what *Virtù* double-locks in cabinets is the real lumber to the boy! Lumber, reader! to thee it was a treasury! Now this cupboard had been the lumber-room in Caleb's household. In an instant the whole troop had thrown themselves on the motley contents. Stray joints of clumsy fishing-rods; artificial baits; a pair of worn-out top-boots, in which one of the urchins, whooping and shouting, buried himself up to the middle; moth-eaten, stained, and ragged, the collegian's gown, — relic of the dead man's palmy time; a bag of carpenter's tools, chiefly broken; a cricket-bat; an odd boxing-glove; a fencing-foil, snapped in the middle; and, more than all, some half-finished attempts at rude toys: a boat, a cart, a doll's house, in which the good-natured Caleb had busied himself for the younger ones of that family in which he had found the fatal ideal of his trite life. One by one were these lugged forth from their dusty slumber, — profane hands struggling for the first right of appropriation. And now, revealed against the wall, glared upon the startled violators of the sanctuary, with glassy eyes and horrent visage, a grim monster. They huddled back one upon the other, pale and breathless, till the eldest, seeing that the creature moved not, took heart, approached on tip-toe, —

twice receded, and twice again advanced, and finally drew out daubed, painted, and tricked forth in the semblance of a griffin, a gigantic kite!

The children, alas! were not old and wise enough to know all the dormant value of that imprisoned aeronaut, which had cost Caleb many a dull evening's labor, — the intended gift to the false one's favorite brother. But they guessed that it was a thing or spirit appertaining of right to them; and they resolved, after mature consultation, to impart the secret of their discovery to an old wooden-legged villager, who had served in the army, who was the idol of all the children of the place; and who, they firmly believed, knew everything under the sun, except the mystical arts of reading and writing. Accordingly, having seen that the coast was clear, — for they considered their parents (as the children of the hard-working often do) the natural foes to amusement, — they carried the monster into an old out-house, and ran to the veteran to beg him to come up slyly and inspect its properties.

Three months after this memorable event, arrived the new pastor, — a slim, prim, orderly, and starch young man, framed by nature and trained by practice to bear a great deal of solitude and starving. Two loving couples had waited to be married till his reverence should arrive. The ceremony performed, where was the registry-book? The vestry was searched, — the churchwardens interrogated; the gay clerk who, on the demise of his deaf predecessor, had come into office a little before Caleb's last illness, had a dim recollection of having taken the registry up to Mr. Price at the time the vestry-room was whitewashed. The house was searched, — the cupboard, the mysterious cupboard, was explored. "Here it is, sir!" cried the clerk; and

he pounced upon a pale parchment volume. The thin clergyman opened it, and recoiled in dismay, — more than three-fourths of the leaves had been torn out.

"It is the moths, sir," said the gardener's wife, who had not yet removed from the house.

The clergyman looked round; one of the children was trembling. "What have you done to this book, little one?"

"That book? — the — hi! — hi! — "

"Speak the truth, and you sha'n't be punished."

"I did not know it was any harm — hi! — hi! — "

"Well, and — "

"And old Ben helped us."

"Well?"

"And — and — and — hi! — hi! — The tail of the kite, sir! — "

"Where is the kite?"

Alas! the kite and its tail were long ago gone to that undiscovered limbo where all things lost, broken, vanished, and destroyed, — things that lose themselves, for servants are too honest to steal; things that break themselves, for servants are too careful to break, — find an everlasting and impenetrable refuge.

"It does not signify a pin's head," said the clerk; "the parish must find a new un!"

"It is no fault of mine," said the pastor. "Are my chops ready?"



## CHAPTER II.

And soothed with idle dreams the frowning fate.

CRABBE.

"WHY does not my father come back? What a time he has been away!"

"My dear Philip, business detains him: but he will be here in a few days, — perhaps, to-day!"

"I should like him to see how much I am improved."

"Improved in what, Philip?" said the mother, with a smile. "Not Latin, I am sure; for I have not seen you open a book since you insisted on poor Todd's dismissal."

"Todd! Oh, he was such a scrub, and spoke through his nose: what could he know of Latin?"

"More than you ever will, I fear, unless —" and here there was a certain hesitation in the mother's voice, — "unless your father consents to your going to school."

"Well, I should like to go to Eton! That's the only school for a gentleman. I've heard my father say so."

"Philip, you are too proud."

"Proud! — you often call me proud; but, then, you kiss me when you do so. Kiss me now, mother."

The lady drew her son to her breast, put aside the clustering hair from his forehead, and kissed him; but the kiss was sad, and a moment after she pushed him away gently, and muttered, unconscious that she was overheard, —

"If, after all, my devotion to the father should wrong the children!"

The boy started, and a cloud passed over his brow; but he said nothing. A light step entered the room through the French casements that opened on the lawn, and the mother turned to her youngest born, and her eye brightened.

"Mamma! mamma! here is a letter for you. I snatched it from John: it is papa's handwriting."

The lady uttered a joyous exclamation, and seized the letter. The younger child nestled himself on a stool at her feet, looking up while she read it; the elder stood apart, leaning on his gun, and with something of thought, even of gloom, upon his countenance.

There was a strong contrast in the two boys. The elder, who was about fifteen, seemed older than he was, not only from his height, but from the darkness of his complexion, and a certain proud, nay, imperious expression upon features that, without having the soft and fluent graces of childhood, were yet regular and striking. His dark-green shooting-dress, with the belt and pouch, the cap, with its gold tassel set upon his luxuriant curls, which had the purple gloss of the raven's plume, blended, perhaps, something prematurely manly in his own tastes, with the love of the fantastic and the picturesque which bespeaks the presiding genius of the proud mother. The younger son had scarcely told his ninth year; and the soft, auburn ringlets, descending half-way down the shoulders; the rich and delicate bloom that exhibits at once the hardy health and the gentle fostering; the large, deep-blue eyes, the flexile and almost effeminate contour of the harmonious features, — altogether made such an ideal of childlike beauty as Lawrence had loved to paint or Chantrey model. And the daintiest cares of a mother, who, as yet, has her darling all to herself, — her toy, her plaything, — were visible

in the large falling collar of finest cambric, and the blue velvet dress with its filigree buttons and embroidered sash.

Both the boys had about them the air of those whom fate ushers blandly into life,—the air of wealth and birth and luxury, spoiled and pampered as if earth had no thorn for their feet, and heaven not a wind to visit their young cheeks too roughly. The mother had been extremely handsome; and, though the first bloom of youth was now gone, she had still the beauty that might captivate new love,—an easier task than to retain the old. Both her sons, though differing from each other, resembled her: she had the *features* of the younger; and probably any one who had seen her in her own earlier youth, would have recognized in that child's gay yet gentle countenance, the mirror of the mother when a girl. Now, however, especially when silent or thoughtful, the *expression* of her face was rather that of the elder boy: the cheek, once so rosy, was now pale though clear, with something, which time had given, of pride and thought in the curved lip and the high forehead. One who could have looked on her in her more lonely hours, might have seen that the pride had known shame, and the thought was the shadow of the passions of fear and sorrow.

But now as she read those hasty, brief, but well-remembered characters,—read as one whose heart was in her eyes,—joy and triumph alone were visible in that eloquent countenance. Her eyes flashed, her breast heaved: and at length, clasping the letter to her lips, she kissed it again and again with passionate transport. Then, as her eyes met the dark, inquiring, earnest gaze of her eldest born, she flung her arms round him, and wept vehemently.

"What is the matter, mamma, dear mamma?" said the youngest, pushing himself between Philip and his mother.

"Your father is coming back, this day, — this very hour; and you — you — child — you, Philip —" Here sobs broke in upon her words, and left her speechless.

The letter that had produced this effect ran as follows: —

TO MRS. MORTON, FERNSIDE COTTAGE.

DEAREST KATE, — My last letter prepared you for the news I have now to relate, — my poor uncle is no more. Though I had seen so little of him, especially of late years, his death sensibly affected me; but I have at least the consolation of thinking, that there is nothing now to prevent my doing justice to you. I am the sole heir to his fortune, — I have it in my power, dearest Kate, to offer you a tardy recompense for all you have put up with for my sake; a sacred testimony to your long forbearance, your unrepachable love, your wrongs, and your devotion. Our children, too, — my noble Philip! — kiss them, Kate, kiss them for me a thousand times.

I write in great haste, — the burial is just over, and my letter will only serve to announce my return. My darling Catherine, I shall be with you almost as soon as these lines meet your eyes, — those dear eyes, that, for all the tears they have shed for my faults and follies, have never looked the less kind.

Yours, ever as ever,

PHILIP BEAUFORT.

This letter has told its tale and little remains to explain. Philip Beaufort was one of those men of whom there are many in his peculiar class of society, — easy, thoughtless, good-humored, generous, with feelings infinitely better than his principles.

Inheriting himself but a moderate fortune, which was three parts in the hands of the Jews before he was

twenty-five, he had the most brilliant expectations from his uncle, — an old bachelor, who, from a courtier, had turned a misanthrope, cold, shrewd, penetrating, worldly, sarcastic, and imperious; and from this relation he received, meanwhile, a handsome, and indeed munificent allowance. About sixteen years before the date at which this narrative opens, Philip Beaufort had “run off,” as the saying is, with Catherine Morton, then little more than a child, — a motherless child, — educated at a boarding-school to notions and desires far beyond her station; for she was the daughter of a provincial tradesman. And Philip Beaufort, in the prime of life, was possessed of most of the qualities that dazzle the eyes, and many of the arts that betray the affections. It was suspected by some that they were privately married: if so, the secret had been closely kept, and baffled all the inquiries of the stern old uncle. Still there was much, not only in the manner, at once modest and dignified, but in the character of Catherine, which was proud and high-spirited, to give color to the suspicion. Beaufort, a man naturally careless of forms, paid her a marked and punctilious respect; and his attachment was evidently one not only of passion but of confidence and esteem. Time developed in her mental qualities far superior to those of Beaufort, and for these she had ample leisure of cultivation. To the influence derived from her mind and person she added that of a frank, affectionate, and winning disposition; their children cemented the bond between them. Mr. Beaufort was passionately attached to field-sports. He lived the greater part of the year with Catherine, at the beautiful cottage to which he had built hunting-stables that were the admiration of the county; and though the cottage was near London, the pleasures of the metropolis seldom

allured him for more than a few days — generally but a few hours — at a time; and he always hurried back with renewed relish to what he considered his home.

Whatever the connection between Catherine and himself (and of the *true* nature of that connection, the introductory chapter has made the reader more enlightened than the world), her influence had, at least, weaned from all excesses, and many follies, a man who, before he knew her, had seemed likely, from the extreme joviality and carelessness of his nature, and a very imperfect education, to contract whatever vices were most in fashion as preservatives against *ennui*. And if their union had been openly hallowed by the church, Philip Beaufort had been universally esteemed the model of a tender husband and a fond father. Ever, as he became more and more acquainted with Catherine's natural good qualities, and more and more attached to his home, had Mr. Beaufort, with the generosity of true affection, desired to remove from her the pain of an equivocal condition by a public marriage. But Mr. Beaufort, though generous, was not free from the worldliness which had met him everywhere, amidst the society in which his youth had been spent. His uncle, the head of one of those families which yearly vanish from the commonalty into the peerage, but which once formed a distinguished peculiarity in the aristocracy of England, — families of ancient birth, immense possessions, at once noble and untitled, — held his estates by no other tenure than his own caprice. Though he professed to like Philip, yet he saw but little of him. When the news of the illicit connection his nephew was reported to have formed reached him, he at first resolved to break it off; but observing that Philip no longer gambled, nor run in debt, and had retired from the turf to the safer and

more economical pastimes of the field, he contented himself with inquiries which satisfied him that Philip was not married; and perhaps he thought it, on the whole, more prudent to wink at an error that was not attended by the bills which had heretofore characterized the human infirmities of his reckless nephew. He took care, however, incidentally, and in reference to some scandal of the day, to pronounce his opinion, not upon the fault, but upon the only mode of repairing it.

"If ever," said he, — and he looked grimly at Philip while he spoke, — "a gentleman were to disgrace his ancestry by introducing into his family one whom his own sister could not receive at her house, why, he ought to sink to her level, and wealth would but make his disgrace the more notorious. If I had an only son, and that son were booby enough to do anything so discreditable as to marry beneath him, I would rather have my footman for my successor. You understand, Phil?"

Philip did understand, and looked round at the noble house and the stately park, and his generosity was not equal to the trial. Catherine — so great was her power over him — might, perhaps, have easily triumphed over his more selfish calculations; but her love was too delicate ever to breathe, of itself, the hope that lay deepest at her heart. And her children! ah! for them she pined, but for them she also hoped. Before them was a long future, and she had all confidence in Philip. Of late, there had been considerable doubts how far the elder Beaufort would realize the expectations in which his nephew had been reared. Philip's younger brother had been much with the old gentleman, and appeared to be in high favor: this brother was a man in every respect opposite to Philip, — sober, supple, decorous, ambitious, with a face of smiles and a heart of ice.

But the old gentleman was taken dangerously ill, and Philip was summoned to his bed of death. Robert, the younger brother, was there also, with his wife (for he had married prudently) and his children (he had two, a son and a daughter). Not a word did the uncle say as to the disposition of his property till an hour before he died. And then, turning in his bed, he looked first at one nephew, then at the other, and faltered out, —

“ Philip, you are a scapegrace, but a gentleman! Robert, you are a careful, sober, plausible man; and it is a great pity you were not in business: you would have made a fortune! — you won’t inherit one, though you think it. I have marked you, sir. Philip, beware of your brother. Now, let me see the parson.”

The old man died; the will was read; and Philip succeeded to a rental of £20,000 a year; Robert, to a diamond ring, a gold repeater, £5000, and a curious collection of bottled snakes.



## CHAPTER III.

Stay, delightful Dream;  
Let him within his pleasant garden walk;  
Give him her arm, — of blessings let them talk.

CRABBE.

“THERE, Robert, there! now you can see the new stables. By Jove, they are the completest thing in the three kingdoms!”

“Quite a pile! But is that the house? You lodge your horses more magnificently than yourself.”

“But is it not a beautiful cottage? — to be sure, it owes everything to Catherine’s taste. Dear Catherine!”

Mr. Robert Beaufort, — for this colloquy took place between the brothers as their britska rapidly descended the hill, at the foot of which lay Fernside Cottage and its miniature demesnes, — Mr. Robert Beaufort pulled his travelling-cap over his brows, and his countenance fell, whether at the name of Catherine, or the tone in which the name was uttered; and there was a pause, broken by a third occupant of the britska, a youth of about seventeen, who sat opposite the brothers.

“And who are those boys on the lawn, uncle?”

“Who are those boys?” It was a simple question, but it grated on the ear of Mr. Robert Beaufort, — it struck discord at his heart. “Who were those boys?” as they ran across the sward, eager to welcome their father home, the westering sun shining full on their joyous faces, their young forms so lithe and so graceful, their merry laughter ringing in the still air. “Those

boys," thought Mr. Robert Beaufort, "the sons of shame, rob mine of his inheritance." The elder brother turned round at his nephew's question, and saw the expression on Robert's face. He bit his lip, and answered gravely, —

"Arthur, they are my children."

"I did not know you were married," replied Arthur, bending forward to take a better view of his cousins.

Mr. Robert Beaufort smiled bitterly, and Philip's brow grew crimson.

The carriage stopped at the little lodge. Philip opened the door, and jumped to the ground; the brother and his son followed. A moment more, and Philip was locked in Catherine's arms, her tears falling fast upon his breast; his children plucking at his coat; and the younger one crying, in his shrill impatient treble, "Papa! papa! you don't see Sidney, papa!"

Mr. Robert Beaufort placed his hand on his son's shoulder, and arrested his steps, as they contemplated the group before them.

"Arthur," said he, in a hollow whisper, "those children are our disgrace and your supplanters; they are bastards! bastards! and they are to be his heirs!"

Arthur made no answer, but the smile with which he had hitherto gazed on his new relations vanished.

"Kate," said Mr. Beaufort, as he turned from Mrs. Morton, and lifted his youngest born in his arms, "this is my brother and his son: they are welcome, are they not?"

Mr. Robert bowed low, and extended his hand, with stiff affability, to Mrs. Morton, muttering something equally complimentary and inaudible.

The party proceeded towards the house. Philip and Arthur brought up the rear.

"Do you shoot?" asked Arthur, observing the gun in his cousin's hand.

"Yes. I hope this season to bag as many head as my father: he is a famous shot. But this is only a single barrel, and an old-fashioned sort of detonator. My father must get me one of the new guns. I can't afford it myself."

"I should think not," said Arthur, smiling.

"Oh, as to that," resumed Philip, quickly, and with a heightened color, "I *could* have managed it very well if I had not given thirty guineas for a brace of pointers the other day: they are the best dogs you ever saw."

"Thirty guineas!" echoed Arthur, looking with *naïve* surprise at the speaker; "why, how old are you?"

"Just fifteen last birthday. Holla, John! John Green!" cried the young gentleman, in an imperious voice, to one of the gardeners, who was crossing the lawn, "see that the nets are taken down to the lake to-morrow, and that my tent is pitched properly, by the lime-trees, by nine o'clock. I hope you will understand me this time: Heaven knows you take a deal of telling before you understand anything!"

"Yes, Mr. Philip," said the man, bowing obsequiously; and then muttered, as he went off, "Drat the nat'rel! he speaks to a poor man as if he warn't flesh and blood."

"Does your father keep hunters?" asked Philip.

"No."

"Why?"

"Perhaps one reason may be, that he is not rich enough."

"Oh! that's a pity. Never mind, we'll mount you, whenever you like to pay us a visit."

Young Arthur drew himself up, and his air, naturally frank and gentle, became haughty and reserved. Philip gazed on him, and felt offended; he scarce knew why, but from that moment he conceived a dislike to his cousin.

## CHAPTER IV.

For a man is helpless and vain, of a condition so exposed to calamity that a raisin is able to kill him: any trooper out of the Egyptian army, — a fly can do it, when it goes on God's errand.  
— JEREMY TAYLOR, *On the Deceitfulness of the Heart*.

THE two brothers sat at their wine after dinner. Robert sipped claret, the sturdy Philip quaffed his more generous port. Catherine and the boys might be seen at a little distance, and by the light of a soft August moon, among the shrubs and *bosquets* of the lawn.

Philip Beaufort was about five-and-forty, tall, robust, nay, of great strength of frame and limb; with a countenance extremely winning, not only from the comeliness of its features, but its frankness, manliness, and good-nature. His was the bronzed, rich complexion, the inclination towards *embonpoint*, the athletic girth of chest, which denote redundant health and mirthful temper and sanguine blood. Robert, who had lived the life of cities, was a year younger than his brother; nearly as tall, but pale, meagre, stooping, and with a careworn, anxious, hungry look, which made the smile that hung upon his lips seem hollow and artificial. His dress, though plain, was neat and studied; his manner bland and plausible; his voice sweet and low. There was that about him which, if it did not win liking, tended to excite respect, — a certain decorum, a nameless propriety of appearance and bearing, that approached a little to formality: his every movement, slow and measured, was that of one who paced in the circle that fences round the habits and usages of the world.

"Yes," said Philip, "I had always decided to take this step, whenever my poor uncle's death should allow me to do so. You have seen Catherine, but you do not know half her good qualities: she would grace any station; and, besides, she nursed me so carefully last year, when I broke my collar-bone in that cursed steeple-chase. Egad, I am getting too heavy, and growing too old, for such schoolboy pranks."

"I have no doubt of Mrs. Morton's excellence, and I honor your motives; still, when you talk of her gracing any station, you must not forget, my dear brother, that she will be no more received as Mrs. Beaufort than she is now as Mrs. Morton."

"But I tell you, Robert, that I am really married to her already; that she would never have left her home but on that condition; that we were married the very day we met after her flight."

Robert's thin lips broke into a slight sneer of incredulity.

"My dear brother, you do right to say this, — any man in your situation would say the same. But I know that my uncle took every pains to ascertain if the report of a private marriage were true."

"And you helped him in the search, eh, Bob?"

Bob slightly blushed. Philip went on.

"Ha, ha! to be sure you did; you knew that such a discovery would have done for me in the old gentleman's good opinion. But I blinded you both, ha, ha! The fact is that we were married with the greatest privacy; that even now, I own, it would be difficult for Catherine herself to establish the fact, unless I wished it. I am ashamed to think that I have never even told her where I keep the main proof of the marriage. I induced one witness to leave the country, the other must be long

since dead: my poor friend, too, who officiated, is no more. Even the register, Bob, the register itself has been destroyed: and yet, notwithstanding, I will prove the ceremony, and clear up poor Catherine's fame; for I have the attested copy of the register safe and sound. Catherine not married! why, look at her, man!"

Mr. Robert Beaufort glanced at the window for a moment, but his countenance was still that of one unconvinced.

"Well, brother," said he, dipping his fingers in the water-glass, "it is not for me to contradict you. It is a very curious tale: parson dead, — witnesses missing. But still, as I said before, if you are resolved on a public marriage, you are wise to insist that there has been a previous private one. Yet, believe me, Philip," continued Robert with solemn earnestness, "the world —"

"D— the world! What do I care for the world! We don't want to go to routs and balls, and give dinners to fine people. I shall live much the same as I have always done; only I shall now keep the hounds, — they are very indifferently kept at present, — and have a yacht; and engage the best masters for the boys. Phil wants to go to Eton, but I know what Eton is: poor fellow! his feelings might be hurt there, if others are as sceptical as yourself. I suppose my old friends will not be less civil, now I have £20,000 a year. And as for the society of women, between you and me, I don't care a rush for any woman but Catherine: poor Katty!"

"Well, you are the best judge of your own affairs: you don't misinterpret my motives!"

"My dear Bob, no. I am quite sensible how kind it is in you, — a man of your starch habits and strict views coming here to pay a mark of respect to Kate" (Mr.

Robert turned uneasily in his chair); "even before you knew of the private marriage, and I am sure I don't blame you for never having done it before. You did quite right to try your chance with my uncle."

Mr. Robert turned in his chair again, still more uneasily, and cleared his voice as if to speak. But Philip tossed off his wine, and proceeded without heeding his brother, —

"And though the poor old man does not seem to have liked you the better for consulting his scruples, yet we must make up for the partiality of his will. Let me see, — what, with your wife's fortune, you muster £2000 a year?"

"Only £1500, Philip, and Arthur's education is growing expensive. Next year he goes to college. He is certainly very clever, and I have great hopes —"

"That he will do honor to us all, — so have I. He is a noble young fellow; and I think my Philip may find a great deal to learn from him: Phil is a sad, idle dog, — but with a devil of a spirit, and sharp as a needle. I wish you could see him ride. Well, to return to Arthur. Don't trouble yourself about his education, — that shall be my care. He shall go to Christ Church, — a gentleman-commoner of course, — and when he's of age we'll get him into Parliament. Now for yourself, Bob. I shall sell the town-house in Berkeley Square, and whatever it brings you shall have. Besides that, I'll add £1500 a year to your £1500, — so that's said and done. Pshaw! brothers should be brothers. — Let's come out and play with the boys!"

The two Beauforts stepped through the open casement into the lawn.

"You look pale, Bob, — all you London fellows do. As for me, I feel as strong as a horse; much better than



when I was one of your gay dogs straying loose about the town! 'Gad, I have never had a moment's ill health, except from a fall now and then. I feel as if I should live forever, and that's the reason why I could never make a will."

"Have you never, then, made your will?"

"Never as yet. Faith, till now, I had little enough to leave. But now that all this great Beaufort property is at my own disposal, I must think of Kate's jointure. By Jove! now I speak of it, I will ride to — to-morrow, and consult the lawyer there both about the will and the marriage. You will stay for the wedding?"

"Why, I *must* go into — shire to-morrow evening to place Arthur with his tutor. But I'll return for the wedding, if you particularly wish it: only Mrs. Beaufort is a woman of very strict —"

"I *do* particularly wish it," interrupted Philip, gravely; "for I desire, for Catherine's sake, that you, my sole surviving relation, may not seem to withhold your countenance from an act of justice to her. And as for your wife, I fancy £1500 a year would reconcile her to my marrying out of the Penitentiary."

Mr. Robert bowed his head, coughed huskily, and said, "I appreciate your generous affection, Philip."

The next morning, while the elder parties were still over the breakfast-table, the young people were in the grounds: it was a lovely day, one of the last of the luxuriant August, — and Arthur, as he looked round, thought he had never seen a more beautiful place. It was, indeed, just the spot to captivate a youthful and susceptible fancy. The village of Fernside, though in one of the counties adjoining Middlesex, and as near to London as the owner's passionate pursuits of the field would permit, was yet as rural and sequestered as if

a hundred miles distant from the smoke of the huge city. Though the dwelling was called a cottage, Philip had enlarged the original modest building into a villa of some pretensions. On either side a graceful and well-proportioned portico stretched verandas, covered with roses and clematis; to the right extended a range of costly conservatories, terminating in vistas of trellis-work, which formed those elegant alleys called rosaries, and served to screen the more useful gardens from view. The lawn, smooth and even, was studded with American plants and shrubs in flower, and bounded on one side by a small lake, on the opposite bank of which limes and cedars threw their shadows over the clear waves. On the other side a light fence separated the grounds from a large paddock, in which three or four hunters grazed in indolent enjoyment. It was one of those cottages which bespeak the ease and luxury not often found in more ostentatious mansions: an abode which, at sixteen, the visitor contemplates with vague notions of poetry and love, — which, at forty, he might think dull and d—d expensive; which, at sixty, he would pronounce to be damp in winter, and full of earwigs in the summer. Master Philip was leaning on his gun; Master Sidney was chasing a peacock butterfly; Arthur was silently gazing on the shining lake, and the still foliage that drooped over its surface. In the countenance of this young man there was something that excited a certain interest. He was less handsome than Philip, but the expression of his face was more prepossessing. There was something of pride in the forehead; but of good-nature, not unmixed with irresolution and weakness, in the curves of the mouth. He was more delicate of frame than Philip, and the color of his complexion was not that of a robust constitution. His movements were

graceful and self-possessed, and he had his father's sweetness of voice.

"This is really beautiful!—I envy you, cousin Philip."

"Has not your father got a country-house?"

"No: we live either in London or at some hot, crowded watering-place."

"Yes; this is very nice during the shooting and hunting season. But my old nurse says we shall have a much finer place now. I liked this very well till I saw Lord Belville's place. But it is very unpleasant not to have the finest house in the county: *aut Cæsar aut nullus*,—that's my motto. Ah! do you see that swallow? I'll bet you a guinea I hit it."

"No, poor thing! don't hurt it." But ere the remonstrance was uttered, the bird lay quivering on the ground.

"It is just September, and one must keep one's hand in," said Philip, as he reloaded his gun.

To Arthur this action seemed a wanton cruelty; it was rather the wanton recklessness which belongs to a wild boy accustomed to gratify the impulse of the moment,—the recklessness which is *not* cruelty in the boy, but which prosperity may pamper into cruelty in the man. And scarce had he reloaded his gun before the neigh of a young colt came from the neighboring paddock, and Philip bounded to the fence. "He calls me, poor fellow; you shall see him feed from my hand. Run in for a piece of bread,—a large piece, Sidney." The boy and the animal seemed to understand each other. "I see you don't like horses," he said to Arthur. "As for me, I love dogs, horses,—every dumb creature."

"Except swallows!" said Arthur, with a half smile, and a little surprised at the inconsistency of the boast.

"Oh! that is *sport*, — all fair: it is not to hurt the swallow, — it is to obtain skill," said Philip, coloring; and then, as if not quite easy with his own definition, he turned away abruptly.

"This is dull work, — suppose we fish. By Jove!" (he had caught his father's expletive) "that blockhead has put the tent on the wrong side of the lake, after all. Holla, you, sir!" and the unhappy gardener looked up from his flower-beds; "what ails you? I have a great mind to tell my father of you, — you grow stupider every day. I told you to put the tent under the lime-trees."

"We could not manage it, sir; the boughs were in the way."

"And why did not you cut the boughs, blockhead?"

"I did not dare do so, sir, without master's orders," said the man, doggedly.

"My orders are sufficient, I should think; so none of your impertinence," cried Philip, with a raised color; and, lifting his hand, in which he held his ramrod, he shook it menacingly over the gardener's head: "I've a great mind to —"

"What's the matter, Philip?" cried the good-humored voice of his father. "Fie!"

"This fellow does not mind what I say, sir."

"I did not like to cut the boughs of the lime-trees without your orders, sir," said the gardener.

"No, it would be a pity to cut them. You should consult me there, Master Philip;" and the father shook him by the collar with a good-natured and affectionate but rough sort of caress.

"Be quiet, father!" said the boy, petulantly and proudly; "or," he added, in a lower voice, but one which showed emotion, "my cousin may think you mean less kindly than you always do, sir."

The father was touched: "Go and cut the lime-boughs, John; and always do as Master Philip tells you."

The mother was behind, and she sighed audibly. — "Ah! dearest, I fear you will spoil him."

"Is he not your son? and do we not owe him the more respect for having hitherto allowed others to —"

He stopped, and the mother could say no more. And thus it was, that this boy of powerful character and strong passions had, from motives the most amiable, been pampered from the darling into the despot.

"And now, Kate, I will, as I told you last night, ride over to — and fix the earliest day for our public marriage: I will ask the lawyer to dine here, to talk about the proper steps for proving the private one."

"Will that be difficult?" asked Catherine, with natural anxiety.

"No, — for, if you remember, I had the precaution to get an examined copy of the register; otherwise, I own to you, I should have been alarmed. I don't know what has become of Smith. I heard some time since from his father that he had left the colony; and (I never told you before, — it would have made you uneasy) once, a few years ago, when my uncle again got it into his head that we might be married, I was afraid poor Caleb's successor might, by chance, betray us. So I went over to A—— myself, being near it when I was staying with Lord C——, in order to see how far it might be necessary to secure the parson; and only think! I found an accident had happened to the register, — so, as the clergyman could know nothing, I kept my own counsel. How lucky I have the copy! No doubt the lawyer will set all to rights; and, while I am making settlements,

I may as well make my will. I have plenty for both boys, but the dark one must be the heir. Does he not look born to be an eldest son?"

"Ah, Philip!"

"Pshaw! one don't die the sooner for making a will. Have I the air of a man in a consumption?"—and the sturdy sportsman glanced complacently at the strength and symmetry of his manly limbs. "Come, Phil, let's go to the stables. Now, Robert, I will show you what is better worth seeing than those miserable flowerbeds." So saying, Mr. Beaufort led the way to the courtyard at the back of the cottage. Catherine and Sidney remained on the lawn: the rest followed the host. The grooms, of whom Beaufort was the idol, hastened to show how well the horses had thriven in his absence.

"Do see how Brown Bess has come on, sir; but, to be sure, Master Philip keeps her in exercise. Ah, sir, he will be as good a rider as your honor, one of these days."

"He ought to be a better, Tom; for I think he'll never have my weight to carry. Well, saddle Brown Bess for Master Philip. What horse shall I take? Ah! here's my old friend, Puppet!"

"I don't know what's come to Puppet, sir; he's off his feed, and turned sulky. I tried him over the bar yesterday: but he was quite restive like."

"The devil he was! So, so, old boy, you shall go over the six-barred gate to-day, or we'll know why." And Mr. Beaufort patted the sleek neck of his favorite hunter. "Put the saddle on him, Tom."

"Yes, your honor. I sometimes think he is hurt in the loins somehow,—he don't take to his leaps kindly, and he always tries to bite when we bridles him. Be quiet, sir!"

"Only his airs," said Philip. "I did not know this or *I* would have taken him over the gate. Why did not you tell me, Tom?"

"Lord love you, sir! because you have such a spurret; and if anything had come to you —"

"Quite right: you are not weight enough for Puppet, my boy; and he never did like any one to back him but myself. What say you, brother, will you ride with us?"

"No, I must go to — to-day with Arthur. I have engaged the post-horses at two o'clock; but I shall be with you to-morrow or the day after. You see his tutor expects him; and as he is backward in his mathematics, he has no time to lose."

"Well, then, good-by, nephew!" and Beaufort slipped a pocketbook into the boy's hand. "Tush! whenever you want money, don't trouble your father, — write to me: we shall be always glad to see you; and you must teach Philip to like his book a little better, — eh, Phil?"

"No, father; *I* shall be rich enough to do without books," said Philip, rather coarsely: but then observing the heightened color of his cousin, he went up to him, and with a generous impulse said, "Arthur, you admired this gun; pray accept it. Nay, don't be shy, — I can have as many as I like for the asking: you're not so well off, you know."

The intention was kind, but the manner was so patronizing that Arthur felt offended. He put back the gun, and said dryly, "I shall have no occasion for the gun, thank you."

If Arthur was offended by the offer, Philip was much more offended by the refusal. "As you like; I hate pride," said he; and he gave the gun to the groom as he vaulted into his saddle, with the lightness of a young Mercury. "Come, father!"

Mr. Beaufort had now mounted his favorite hunter, — a large, powerful horse, well known for its prowess in the field. The rider trotted him once or twice through the spacious yard.

"Nonsense, Tom: no more hurt in the loins than I am. Open that gate; we will go across the paddock, and take the gate yonder, — the old six-bar, eh, Phil?"

"Capital! — to be sure! —"

The gate was opened, — the grooms stood watchful to see the leap, and a kindred curiosity arrested Robert Beaufort and his son.

How well they looked! those two horsemen: the ease, lightness, spirit of the one, with the fine-limbed and fiery steed that literally "bounded beneath him as a barb," — seemingly as gay, as ardent, and as haughty as the boy-rider; and the manly, and almost herculean form of the elder Beaufort, which, from the buoyancy of its movements, and the supple grace that belongs to the perfect mastership of any athletic art, possessed an elegance and dignity, especially on horseback, which rarely accompanies proportions equally sturdy and robust. There was, indeed, something knightly and chivalrous in the bearing of the elder Beaufort, — in his handsome, aquiline features, the erectness of his mien, the very wave of his hand, as he spurred from the yard.

"What a fine-looking fellow my uncle is!" said Arthur, with involuntary admiration.

"Ay, an excellent life, — amazingly strong!" returned the pale father, with a slight sigh.

"Philip," said Mr. Beaufort, as they cantered across the paddock, "I think the gate is too much for you. I will just take Puppet over, and then we will open it for you."



"Pooh, my dear father! you don't know how I'm improved!" And slackening the rein, and touching the side of his horse, the young rider darted forward and cleared the gate, which was of no common height, with an ease that extorted a loud bravo from the proud father.

"Now, Puppet," said Mr. Beaufort, spurring his own horse. The animal cantered towards the gate, and then suddenly turned round with an impatient and angry snort. "For shame, Puppet!—for shame, old boy!" said the sportsman, wheeling him again to the barrier. The horse shook his head, as if in remonstrance; but the spur vigorously applied, showed him that his master would not listen to his mute reasonings. He bounded forward, made at the gate, struck his hoofs against the top-bar, fell forward, and threw his rider head foremost on the road beyond. The horse rose instantly,—not so the master. The son dismounted, alarmed and terrified. His father was speechless, and blood gushed from the mouth and nostrils, as the head drooped heavily on the boy's breast. The bystanders had witnessed the fall: they crowded to the spot, they took the fallen man from the weak arms of the son,—the head groom examined him with the eye of one who had picked up science from his experience in such casualties.

"Speak, brother!—where are you hurt?" exclaimed Robert Beaufort.

"He will never speak more!" said the groom, bursting into tears. "His neck is broken!"

"Send for the nearest surgeon," cried Mr. Robert. "Good God! boy! don't mount that devilish horse!"

But Arthur had already leaped on the unhappy steed, which had been the cause of this appalling affliction. "Which way?"

"Straight on to —, only two miles: every one knows Mr. Powis's house. God bless you!" said the groom.

Arthur vanished.

"Lift him carefully, and take him to the house," said Mr. Robert. "My poor brother! my dear brother!"

He was interrupted by a cry, a single, shrill, heart-breaking cry; and Philip fell senseless to the ground.

No one heeded him at that hour, — no one heeded the fatherless **BASTARD**. "Gently, gently," said Mr. Robert, as he followed the servants and their load. And he then muttered to himself, and his sallow cheek grew bright, and his breath came short: "He has made no will! — he never made a will!"

## CHAPTER V.

*Constance.*—O boy, then where art thou ?

. . . What becomes of me ?

*King John.*

It was three days after the death of Philip Beaufort; for the surgeon arrived only to confirm the judgment of the groom: in the drawing-room of the cottage, the windows closed, lay the body, in its coffin, the lid not yet nailed down. There, prostrate on the floor, tearless, speechless, was the miserable Catherine; poor Sidney, too young to comprehend all his loss, sobbing at her side; while Philip apart, seated beside the coffin, gazed abstractedly on that cold, rigid face which had never known one frown for his boyish follies.

In another room, that had been appropriated to the late owner, called his study, sat Robert Beaufort. Everything in this room spoke of the deceased. Partially separated from the rest of the house, it communicated, by a winding staircase, with a chamber above, to which Philip had been wont to betake himself whenever he returned late, and over-exhilarated, from some rural feast crowning a hard day's hunt. Above a quaint, old-fashioned bureau of Dutch workmanship (which Philip had picked up at a sale in the earlier years of his marriage) was a portrait of Catherine taken in the bloom of her youth. On a peg on the door that led to the staircase, still hung his rough driving-coat. The window commanded the view of the paddock, in which the worn-out hunter or the unbroken colt grazed at will.

Around the walls of the "study" (a strange misnomer!) hung prints of celebrated fox-hunts and renowned steeple-chases: guns, fishing-rods, and foxes' brushes, ranged with a sportsman's neatness, supplied the place of books. On the mantelpiece lay a cigar-case, a well-worn volume on the Veterinary Art, and the last number of "The Sporting Magazine." And in that room, — thus witnessing of the hardy, masculine, rural life that had passed away, — sallow, stooping, town-worn, sat, I say, Robert Beaufort, the heir-at-law, alone: for the very day of the death he had remanded his son home with the letter that announced to his wife the change in their fortunes, and directed her to send his lawyer post-haste to the house of death. The bureau and the drawers and the boxes which contained the papers of the deceased, were open; their contents had been ransacked; no certificate of the private marriage, no hint of such an event, not a paper found to signify the last wishes of the rich dead man.

He had died, and made no sign. Mr. Robert Beaufort's countenance was still and composed.

A knock at the door was heard; the lawyer entered.

"Sir, the undertakers are here, and Mr. Greaves has ordered the bells to be rung: at three o'clock he will read the service."

"I am obliged to you, Blackwell, for taking these melancholy offices on yourself. My poor brother! — it is so sudden! But the funeral, you say, ought to take place to-day?"

"The weather is so warm," said the lawyer, wiping his forehead. As he spoke, the death-bell was heard.

There was a pause.

"It would have been a terrible shock to Mrs. Morton if she had been his wife," observed Mr. Blackwell;

"but I suppose persons of that kind have very little feeling. I must say that it was fortunate for the family, that the event happened before Mr. Beaufort was wheedled into so improper a marriage."

"It *was* fortunate, Blackwell. Have you ordered the post-horses? I shall start immediately after the funeral."

"What is to be done with the cottage, sir?"

"You may advertise it for sale."

"And Mrs. Morton and the boys?"

"Hum, — we will consider. She was a tradesman's daughter. I think I ought to provide for her suitably, eh?"

"It is more than the world could expect from you, sir; it is very different from a wife."

"Oh, very! very much so, indeed! Just ring for a lighted candle, we will seal up these boxes. And — I think I could take a sandwich. Poor Philip!"

The funeral was over; the dead shovelled away. What a strange thing it does seem, that that very form which we prized so charily, for which we prayed the winds to be gentle, which we lapped from the cold in our arms, from whose footstep we would have removed a stone, should be suddenly thrust out of sight, — an abomination that the earth must not look upon, a despicable loathsomeness, to be concealed and to be forgotten! And this same composition of bone and muscle that was yesterday so strong, — which men respected, and women loved, and children clung to, — to-day so lamentably powerless, unable to defend or protect those who lay nearest to its heart; its riches wrested from it, its wishes spat upon, its influence expiring with its last sigh! A breath from its lips making all that mighty difference between what it was and what it is!

The post-horses were at the door as the funeral procession returned to the house.

Mr. Robert Beaufort bowed slightly to Mrs. Morton, and said, with his pocket-handkerchief still before his eyes, —

“ I will write to you in a few days, ma’am; you will find that I shall not forget you. The cottage will be sold; but we sha’n’t hurry you. Good-by, ma’am; good-by, my boys; ” and he patted his nephews on the head.

Philip winced aside, and scowled haughtily at his uncle, who muttered to himself, “ That boy will come to no good! ” Little Sidney put his hand into the rich man’s, and looked up, pleadingly, into his face. “ Can’t you say something pleasant to poor mamma, Uncle Robert? ”

Mr. Beaufort hemmed huskily, and entered the britska, — it had been his brother’s: the lawyer followed, and they drove away.

A week after the funeral, Philip stole from the house into the conservatory, to gather some fruit for his mother; she had scarcely touched food since Beaufort’s death. She was worn to a shadow; her hair had turned gray. Now she had at last found tears, and she wept noiselessly but unceasingly.

The boy had plucked some grapes, and placed them carefully in his basket; he was about to select a nectarine that seemed riper than the rest, when his hand was roughly seized, and the gruff voice of John Green, the gardener, exclaimed, —

“ What are you about, Master Philip? — you must not touch them ere fruit! ”

“ How dare you, fellow! ” cried the young gentleman, in a tone of equal astonishment and wrath.

“ None of your airs, Master Philip! What I mean

is, that some great folks are coming to look at the place to-morrow; and I won't have my show of fruit spoiled by being pawed about by the like of you; so, that's plain, Master Philip!"

The boy grew very pale, but remained silent. The gardener, delighted to retaliate the insolence he had received, continued, —

"You need not go for to look so spiteful, master; you are not the great man you thought you were; you are nobody now, and so you will find ere long. So, march out, if you please: I wants to lock up the glass."

As he spoke, he took the lad roughly by the arm; but Philip, the most irascible of mortals, was strong for his years, and fearless as a young lion. He caught up a watering-pot, which the gardener had deposited while he expostulated with his late tyrant, and struck the man across the face with it so violently and so suddenly, that he fell back over the beds, and the glass crackled and shivered under him. Philip did not wait for the foe to recover his equilibrium; but, taking up his grapes, and possessing himself quietly of the disputed nectarine, quitted the spot; and the gardener did not think it prudent to pursue him. To boys, under ordinary circumstances, — boys who have buffeted their way through a scolding nursery, a wrangling family, or a public school, — there would have been nothing in this squabble to dwell on the memory or vibrate on the nerves, after the first burst of passion; but to Philip Beaufort it was an era in life: it was the first insult he had ever received; it was his initiation into that changed, rough, and terrible career, to which the spoiled darling of vanity and love was henceforth condemned. His pride and his self-esteem had incurred a fearful shock. He entered the house, and a sickness came over him; his limbs

trembled; he sat down in the hall, and, placing the fruit beside him, covered his face with his hands and wept. Those were not the tears of a boy, drawn from a shallow source; they were the burning, agonizing, reluctant tears that men shed, wrung from the heart as if it were its blood. He had never been sent to school, lest he should meet with mortification. He had had various tutors, trained to show, rather than to exact respect; one succeeding another at his own whim and caprice. His natural quickness, and a very strong, hard, inquisitive turn of mind, had enabled him, however, to pick up more knowledge, though of a desultory and miscellaneous nature, than boys of his age generally possess; and his roving, independent, out-of-door existence had served to ripen his understanding. He had certainly, in spite of every precaution, arrived at some, though not very distinct, notion of his peculiar position; but none of its inconveniences had visited him till that day. He began now to turn his eyes to the future; and vague and dark forebodings — a consciousness of the shelter, the protector, the station, he had lost in his father's death — crept coldly over him. While thus musing, a ring was heard at the bell; he lifted his head: it was the postman with a letter. Philip hastily rose, and, averting his face, on which the tears were not dried, took the letter; and then, snatching up his little basket of fruit, repaired to his mother's room.

The shutters were half closed on the bright day, — oh, what a mockery is there in the smile of the happy sun when it shines on the wretched! Mrs. Morton sat, or rather crouched, in a distant corner, her streaming eyes fixed on vacancy, listless, drooping, a very image of desolate woe; and Sidney was weaving flower-chains at her feet.



"Mamma! — mother!" whispered Philip as he threw his arms round her neck; "look up! look up! — my heart breaks to see you. Do taste this fruit: you will die, too, if you go on thus; and what will become of us, — of Sidney?"

Mrs. Morton did look up vaguely into his face, and strove to smile.

"See, too, I have brought you a letter; perhaps good news: shall I break the seal?"

Mrs. Morton shook her head gently, and took the letter, — alas! how different from that one which Sidney had placed in her hands not two short weeks since: it was Mr. Robert Beaufort's handwriting. She shuddered and laid it down. And then there suddenly, and for the first time, flashed across her the sense of her strange position, — the dread of the future. What were her sons to be henceforth? What herself? Whatever the sanctity of her marriage, the law might fail her. At the disposition of Mr. Robert Beaufort the fate of three lives might depend. She gasped for breath, again took up the letter, and hurried over the contents: they ran thus: —

DEAR MADAM, — Knowing that you must naturally be anxious as to the future prospects of your children and yourself, left by my poor brother destitute of all provision, I take the earliest opportunity which it seems to me that propriety and decorum allow, to apprise you of my intentions. I need not say that, properly speaking, you can have no kind of claim upon the relations of my late brother; nor will I hurt your feelings by those moral reflections which at this season of sorrow cannot, I hope, fail involuntarily to force themselves upon you. Without more than this mere allusion to your peculiar connection with my brother, I may, however, be permitted to add, that that connection tended very materially to separate him from the legitimate branches of his family; and

in consulting with them as to a provision for you and your children, I find that, besides scruples that are to be respected, some natural degree of soreness exists upon their minds. Out of regard, however, to my poor brother (though I saw very little of him of late years), I am willing to waive those feelings which, as a father and a husband, you may conceive that I share with the rest of my family. You will probably now decide on living with some of your own relations; and that you may not be entirely a burden to them, I beg to say that I shall allow you a hundred a year, paid, if you prefer it, quarterly. You may also select such articles of linen and plate as you require for your own use. With regard to your sons, I have no objection to place them at a grammar-school, and, at a proper age, to apprentice them to any trade suitable to their future station, in the choice of which your own family can give you the best advice. If they conduct themselves properly, they may always depend on my protection. I do not wish to hurry your movements; but it will probably be painful to you to remain longer than you can help in a place crowded with unpleasant recollections; and as the cottage is to be sold, — indeed, my brother-in-law, Lord Lilburne, thinks it would suit him, — you will be liable to the interruption of strangers to see it; and your prolonged residence at Fernside, you must be sensible, is rather an obstacle to the sale. I beg to enclose you a draft for £100, to pay any present expenses; and to request, when you are settled, to know where the first quarter shall be paid.

I shall write to Mr. Jackson (who, I think, is the bailiff) to detail my instructions as to selling the crops, etc., and discharging the servants, so that you may have no further trouble.

I am, madam, your obedient servant,

ROBERT BEAUFORT.

Berkeley Square, September 12, 18—.

The letter fell from Catherine's hands. Her grief was changed to indignation and scorn.

"The insolent!" she exclaimed, with flashing eyes. "This to me! — to me! — the wife, the lawful wife of

his brother! the wedded mother of his brother's children!"

"Say that again, mother! again, — again!" cried Philip, in a loud voice. "His wife! — wedded!"

"I swear it," said Catherine, solemnly. "I kept the secret for your father's sake. Now, for yours, the truth must be proclaimed."

"Thank God! thank God!" murmured Philip, in a quivering voice, throwing his arms round his brother, "we have no brand on our names, Sidney."

At those accents, so full of suppressed joy and pride, the mother felt at once all that her son had suspected and concealed. She felt that beneath his haughty and wayward character there had lurked delicate and generous forbearance for her; that from his equivocal position his very faults might have arisen; and a pang of remorse for her long sacrifice of the children to the father shot through her heart. It was followed by a fear, an appalling fear, more painful than the remorse. The proofs that were to clear herself and them! The words of her husband, that last awful morning, rang in her ear. The minister dead; the witness absent; the register lost! But the copy of that register! — the copy! might not that suffice? She groaned, and closed her eyes as if to shut out the future; then starting up, she hurried from the room, and went straight to Beaufort's study. As she laid her hand on the latch of the door, she trembled and drew back. But care for the living was stronger at that moment than even anguish for the dead: she entered the apartment; she passed with a firm step to the bureau. It was locked; Robert Beaufort's seal upon the lock: on every cupboard, every box, every drawer, the same seal that spoke of rights more valued than her own. But Catherine was not daunted: she turned and

saw Philip by her side; she pointed to the bureau in silence; the boy understood the appeal. He left the room, and returned in a few moments with a chisel. The lock was broken: tremblingly and eagerly Catherine ransacked the contents, opened paper after paper, letter after letter, in vain, — no certificate, no will, no memorial. Could the brother have abstracted the fatal proof? A word sufficed to explain to Philip what she sought for; and his search was more minute than hers. Every possible receptacle for papers in that room, in the whole house, was explored, and still the search was fruitless.

Three hours afterwards they were in the same room in which Philip had brought Robert Beaufort's letter to his mother. Catherine was seated, tearless, but deadly pale with heart-sickness and dismay.

"Mother," said Philip, "may I now read the letter?"

"Yes, boy; and decide for us all." She paused, and examined his face as he read. He felt her eye was upon him, and restrained his emotions as he proceeded. When he had done he lifted his dark gaze upon Catherine's watchful countenance.

"Mother, whether or not we obtain our rights, you will still refuse this man's charity? I am young, — a boy; but I am strong and active. I will work for you day and night. I have it in me, — I feel it; anything rather than eating *his* bread."

"Philip! Philip! you are indeed my son, your father's son! And have you no reproach for your mother, who so weakly, so criminally, concealed your birthright, till, alas! discovery may be too late? Oh! reproach me, reproach me! it will be kindness. No! do not kiss me! I cannot bear it. Boy! boy! if, as my heart tells me, we fail in proof, do you understand what, in the world's eye, I am; what you are?"

"I do!" said Philip, firmly; and he fell on his knees at her feet. "Whatever others call you, you are a mother, and I your son. You are, in the judgment of Heaven, my father's wife, and I his heir."

Catherine bowed her head, and, with a gush of tears, fell into his arms. Sidney crept up to her, and forced his lips to her cold cheek. "Mamma! what vexes you? Mamma, mamma!"

"Oh, Sidney! Sidney! How like his father! Look at him, Philip! Shall we do right to refuse him even this pittance? Must *he* be a beggar too?"

"Never a beggar," said Philip, with a pride that showed what hard lessons he had yet to learn. "The lawful sons of a Beaufort were not born to beg their bread!"

## CHAPTER VI.

The storm above, and frozen world below.

. . . . .

The olive bough

Faded and cast upon the common wind,

And earth a doveless ark.

LAMAN BLANCHARD.

MR. ROBERT BEAUFORT was generally considered by the world a very worthy man. He had never committed any excess, never gambled nor incurred debt, nor fallen into the warm errors most common with his sex. He was a good husband, a careful father, an agreeable neighbor, rather charitable than otherwise, to the poor. He was honest and methodical in his dealings, and had been known to behave handsomely in different relations of life. Mr. Robert Beaufort, indeed, always meant to do what was right, — *in the eyes of the world!* He had no other rule of action but that which the world supplied: his religion was decorum; his sense of honor was regard to opinion. His heart was a dial to which the world was the sun: when the great eye of the public fell on it, it answered every purpose that a heart could answer; but when that eye was invisible, the dial was mute, — a piece of brass, and nothing more.

It is just to Robert Beaufort to assure the reader that he wholly disbelieved his brother's story of a private marriage. He considered that tale, when heard for the first time, as the mere invention (and a shallow one) of a man wishing to make the imprudent step he

was about to take as respectable as he could. The careless tone of his brother when speaking upon the subject, his confession that of such a marriage there were no distinct proofs, except a copy of a register (which copy Robert had not found), — made his incredulity natural. He therefore deemed himself under no obligation of delicacy or respect to a woman through whose means he had very nearly lost a noble succession, — a woman who had not even borne his brother's name, a woman whom nobody knew. Had Mrs. Morton been Mrs. Beaufort, and the natural sons legitimate children, Robert Beaufort, supposing their situation of relative power and dependence to have been the same, would have behaved with careful and scrupulous generosity. The world would have said, "Nothing can be handsomer than Mr. Robert Beaufort's conduct!" Nay, if Mrs. Morton had been some divorced wife of birth and connections, he would have made very different dispositions in her favor: he would not have allowed the connections to call him *shabby*. But here he felt that, all circumstances considered, the world, if it spoke at all (which it would scarcely think it worth while to do), would be on his side. An artful woman, — low-born and, of course, low-bred, — who wanted to inveigle her rich and careless paramour into marriage; what could be expected from the man she had sought to injure, — the rightful heir? Was it not very good in him to do anything for her, and, if he provided for the children suitably to the original station of the mother, did he not go to the very utmost of reasonable expectation? He certainly thought in his conscience, such as it was, that he had acted well, — not extravagantly, not foolishly, but *well*. He was sure the world would say so if it knew all; he was not bound to do anything. He

was not, therefore, prepared for Catherine's short, haughty, but temperate reply to his letter,—a reply which conveyed a decided refusal of his offers; asserted positively her own marriage, and the claims of her children; intimated legal proceedings; and was signed in the name of Catherine *Beaufort*. Mr. Beaufort put the letter in his bureau, labelled, "Impertinent answer from Mrs. Morton, Sept. 14," and was quite contented to forget the existence of the writer, until his lawyer, Mr. Blackwell, informed him that a suit had been instituted by Catherine. Mr. Robert turned pale, but Blackwell composed him.

"Pooh, sir! you have nothing to fear. It is but an attempt to extort money: the attorney is a low practitioner, accustomed to get up bad cases; they can make nothing of it."

This was true: whatever the rights of the case, poor Catherine had no proofs, no evidence, which could justify a respectable lawyer to advise her proceeding to a suit. She named two witnesses of her marriage,—one dead, the other could not be heard of. She selected for the alleged place in which the ceremony was performed a very remote village, in which it appeared that the register had been destroyed. No attested copy thereof was to be found, and Catherine was stunned on hearing that, even if found, it was doubtful whether it could be received as evidence, unless to corroborate actual personal testimony. It so happened that when Philip, many years ago, had received a copy, he had not shown it to Catherine, nor mentioned Mr. Jones's name as the copyist. In fact, then only three years married to Catherine, his worldly caution had not yet been conquered by confident experience of her generosity. As for the mere moral evidence dependent on the



publication of her banns in London, that amounted to no proof whatever; nor, on inquiry at A——, did the Welsh villagers remember anything further than that, some fifteen years ago, a handsome gentleman had visited Mr. Price, and one or two rather thought that Mr. Price had married him to a lady from London; evidence quite inadmissible against the deadly, damning fact, that, for fifteen years, Catherine had *openly* borne another name, and lived with Mr. Beaufort, ostensibly as his mistress. Her generosity in this destroyed her case. Nevertheless, she found a low practitioner, who took her money and neglected her cause; so her suit was heard and dismissed with contempt. Henceforth then, indeed, in the eyes of the law and the public, Catherine was an impudent adventurer, and her sons were nameless outcasts.

And now, relieved from all fear, Mr. Robert Beaufort entered upon the full enjoyment of his splendid fortune. The house in Berkeley Square was furnished anew. Great dinners and gay routs were given in the ensuing spring. Mr. and Mrs. Beaufort became persons of considerable importance. The rich man had, even when poor, been ambitious; his ambition now centred in his only son. Arthur had always been considered a boy of talents and promise, — to what might he not now aspire? The term of his probation with the tutor was abridged, and Arthur Beaufort was sent at once to Oxford.

Before he went to the university, during a short preparatory visit to his father, Arthur spoke to him of the Mortons.

"What has become of them, sir; and what have you done for them?"

"Done for them!" said Mr. Beaufort, opening his

eyes. "What should I do for persons who have just been harassing me with the most unprincipled litigation? My conduct to them has been too generous; that is, all things considered. But when you are my age you will find there is very little gratitude in the world, Arthur."

"Still, sir," said Arthur, with the good-nature that belonged to him: "still, my uncle was greatly attached to them; and the boys, at least, are guiltless."

"Well, well!" replied Mr. Beaufort, a little impatiently; "I believe they want for nothing: I fancy they are with the mother's relations. Whenever they address me in a proper manner, they shall not find me revengeful or hard-hearted; but, since we are on this topic," continued the father, smoothing his shirt-frill with a care that showed his decorum even in trifles, "I hope you see the results of that kind of connection, and that you will take warning by your poor uncle's example. And now let us change the subject; it is not a very pleasant one, and, at your age, the less your thoughts turn on such matters the better."

Arthur Beaufort, with the careless generosity of youth, that gauges other men's conduct by its own sentiments, believed that his father, who had never been niggardly to himself, had really acted as his words implied, and, engrossed by the pursuits of the new and brilliant career opened, whether to his pleasures or his studies, suffered the objects of his inquiries to pass from his thoughts.

Meanwhile Mrs. Morton, for by that name we must still call her, and her children, were settled in a small lodging in a humble suburb, situated on the highroad between Fernside and the metropolis. She saved from her hopeless lawsuit, after the sale of her jewels and

ornaments, a sufficient sum to enable her, with economy, to live respectably for a year or two at least, during which time she might arrange her plans for the future. She reckoned, as a sure resource, upon the assistance of her relations; but it was one to which she applied with natural shame and reluctance. She had kept up a correspondence with her father during his life. To him she never revealed the secret of her marriage, though she did not write like a person conscious of error. Perhaps, as she always said to her son, she had made to her husband a solemn promise never to divulge or even hint that secret until he himself should authorize its disclosure. For neither he nor Catherine ever contemplated separation or death. Alas! how all of us, when happy, sleep secure in the dark shadows, which ought to warn us of the sorrows that are to come! Still Catherine's father, a man of coarse mind and not rigid principles, did not take much to heart that connection which he assumed to be illicit. She was provided for, that was some comfort: doubtless Mr. Beaufort would act like a gentleman, perhaps at last make her an honest woman and a lady. Meanwhile she had a fine house and a fine carriage and fine servants, and, so far from applying to him for money, was constantly sending him little presents. But Catherine only saw, in his permission of her correspondence, kind, forgiving, and trustful affection, and she loved him tenderly; when he died, the link that bound her to her family was broken. Her brother succeeded to the trade, — a man of probity and honor, but somewhat hard and unamiable. In the only letter she had received from him, — the one announcing her father's death, — he told her plainly, and very properly, that he could not countenance the life she led; that he had children growing up; that all

intercourse between them was at an end, unless she left Mr. Beaufort, when, if she sincerely repented, he would still prove her affectionate brother.

Though Catherine had at the time resented this letter as unfeeling, now, humbled and sorrow-stricken, she recognized the propriety of principle from which it emanated. Her brother was well off for his station: she would explain to him her real situation, — he would believe her story. She would write to him, and beg him, at least, to give aid to her poor children.

But this step she did not take till a considerable portion of her pittance was consumed, — till nearly three parts of a year since Beaufort's death had expired, — and till sundry warnings, not to be lightly heeded, had made her forebode the probability of an early death for herself. From the age of sixteen, when she had been placed by Mr. Beaufort at the head of his household, she had been cradled, not in extravagance, but in an easy luxury, which had not brought with it habits of economy and thrift. She could grudge anything to herself, but to her children, — *his* children, whose every whim had been anticipated, — she had not the heart to be saving. She could have starved in a garret had she been alone; but she could not see them wanting a comfort while she possessed a guinea. Philip, to do him justice, evinced a consideration not to have been expected from his early and arrogant recklessness. But Sidney, — who could expect consideration from such a child? What could he know of the change of circumstances, — of the value of money? Did he seem dejected, Catherine would steal out and spend a week's income on the lapful of toys which she brought home. Did he seem a shade more pale; did he complain of the slightest ailment, — a doctor must be sent for. Alas!

her own ailments, neglected and unheeded, were growing beyond the reach of medicine. Anxious, fearful, gnawed by regret for the past, the thought of famine in the future, — she daily fretted and wore herself away. She had cultivated her mind during her secluded residence with Mr. Beaufort, but she had learned none of the arts by which decayed gentlewomen keep the wolf from the door, — no little holiday accomplishments, which in the day of need turn to useful trade; no water-color drawings, no paintings on velvet, no fabrication of pretty gewgaws, no embroidery and fine needlework. She was helpless, — utterly helpless; if she had resigned herself to the thought of service, she would not have had the physical strength for a place of drudgery, and where could she have found the testimonials necessary for a place of trust? A great change, at this time, was apparent in Philip. Had he fallen, then, into kind hands, and under guiding eyes, his passions and energies might have ripened into rare qualities and great virtues. But perhaps, as Goethe has somewhere said, "Experience, after all, is the best teacher." He kept a constant guard on his vehement temper, — his wayward will; he would not have vexed his mother for the world. But, strange to say (it was a great mystery in the woman's heart), in proportion as he became more amiable, it seemed that his mother loved him less. Perhaps she did not, in that change, recognize so closely the darling of the old time; perhaps the very weaknesses and importunities of Sidney, the hourly sacrifices the child entailed upon her, endeared the younger son more to her, from that natural sense of dependence and protection which forms the great bond between mother and child; perhaps, too, as Philip had been one to inspire as much pride as affection, so the pride faded

away with the expectations that had fed it, and carried off in its decay some of the affection that was intertwined with it. However this be, Philip had formerly appeared the more spoiled and favored of the two; and now Sidney seemed all in all. Thus, beneath the younger son's caressing gentleness there grew up a certain regard for self; it was latent, it took amiable colors, it had even a certain charm and grace in so sweet a child; but selfishness it was not the less. In this he differed from his brother. Philip was self-willed: Sidney self-loving. A certain timidity of character, endearing perhaps to the anxious heart of a mother, made this fault in the younger boy more likely to take root. For, in bold natures, there is a lavish and uncalculating recklessness which scorns self unconsciously: and though there is a fear which arises from a loving heart, and is but sympathy for others, the fear which belongs to a timid character is but egotism, — but when physical, the regard for one's own person; when moral, the anxiety for one's own interests.

It was in a small room in a lodging-house in the suburb of H—— that Mrs. Morton was seated by the window, nervously awaiting the knock of the postman who was expected to bring her brother's reply to her letter. It was, therefore, between ten and eleven o'clock, — a morning in the merry month of June. It was hot and sultry, which is rare in an English June. A fly-trap, red, white, and yellow, suspended from the ceiling, swarmed with flies; flies were on the ceiling, flies buzzed at the windows; the sofa and chairs of horse-hair seemed stuffed with flies. There was an air of heated discomfort in the thick, solid moreen curtains, in the gaudy paper, in the bright-staring carpet, in the very looking-glass over the chimney-piece, where a strip

of mirror lay imprisoned in an embrace of frame covered with yellow muslin. We may talk of the dreariness of winter; and winter, no doubt, is desolate: but what in the world is more dreary to eyes inured to the verdure and bloom of nature, —

“The pomp of groves and garniture of fields,” —

than a close room in a suburban lodging-house; the sun piercing every corner; nothing fresh, nothing cool, nothing fragrant to be seen, felt, or inhaled; all dust, glare, noise, with a chandler's shop, perhaps, next door? Sidney, armed with a pair of scissors, was cutting the pictures out of a story-book which his mother had bought him the day before. Philip, who, of late, had taken much to rambling about the streets, — it may be in hopes of meeting one of those benevolent, eccentric, elderly gentlemen he had read of in old novels, who suddenly come to the relief of distressed virtue; or, more probably, from the restlessness that belonged to his adventurous temperament, — Philip had left the house since breakfast.

“Oh! how hot this nasty room is!” exclaimed Sidney, abruptly, looking up from his employment. “Sha’n't we ever go into the country again, mamma?”

“Not at present, my love.”

“I wish I could have my pony: why can't I have my pony, mamma?”

“Because — because — the pony is sold, Sidney.”

“Who sold it?”

“Your uncle.”

“He is a very naughty man, my uncle: is not he? But can't I have another pony? It would be so nice, this fine weather!”

“Ah! my dear, I wish I could afford it; but you

shall have a ride this week. Yes," continued the mother, as if reasoning with herself, in excuse of the extravagance, "he does not look well: poor child! he *must* have exercise."

"A ride! — oh! that is my own kind mamma!" exclaimed Sidney, clapping his hands. "Not on a donkey, you know! — a pony. The man down the street there lets ponies. I must have the white pony with the long tail. But I say, mamma, don't tell Philip, pray don't; he would be jealous."

"No, not jealous, my dear; why do you think so?"

"Because he is always angry when I ask you for anything. It is very unkind in him, for I don't care if he has a pony, too, — only not the white one."

Here the postman's knock, loud and sudden, startled Mrs. Morton from her seat. She pressed her hands tightly to her heart, as if to still its beating, and went tremulously to the door, thence to the stairs, to anticipate the lumbering step of the slipshod maid-servant.

"Give it me, Jane: give it me!"

"One shilling and eightpence: charged double, — if *you* please, ma'am! Thank you."

"Mamma, may I tell Jane to engage the pony?"

"Not now, my love, sit down; be quiet: I — I am not well."

Sidney, who was affectionate and obedient, crept back peaceably to the window, and, after a short, impatient sigh, resumed the scissors and the story-book. I do not apologize to the reader for the various letters I am obliged to lay before him; for character often betrays itself more in letters than in speech. Mr. Roger Morton's reply was couched in these terms: —



DEAR CATHERINE, — I have received your letter of the 14th inst., and write per return. I am very much grieved to hear of your afflictions; but, whatever you say, I cannot think the late Mr. Beaufort acted like a conscientious man, in forgetting to make his will, and leaving his little ones destitute. It is all very well to talk of his intentions; but the proof of the pudding is in the eating. And it is hard upon me, who have a large family of my own, and get my livelihood by honest industry, to have a rich gentleman's children to maintain. As for your story about the private marriage, it may or not be. Perhaps you were taken in by that worthless man, for a *real* marriage it could not be. And, as you say, the law has decided that point; therefore, the less you say on the matter the better. It all comes to the same thing. People are not bound to believe what can't be proved. And even if what you say is true, you are more to be blamed than pitied for holding your tongue so many years, and discrediting an honest family, as ours has always been considered. I am sure *my* wife would not have thought of such a thing for the finest gentleman that ever wore shoe-leather. However, I don't want to hurt your feelings; and I am sure I am ready to do whatever is right and proper. You cannot expect that I should ask you to my house. My wife, you know, is a very religious woman, — what is called evangelical; but that's neither here nor there. I deal with all people, churchmen and dissenters, — even Jews, — and don't trouble my head much about differences in opinion. I daresay there are many ways to heaven; as I said, the other day, to Mr. Thwaites, our member. But it is right to say my wife will not hear of your coming here; and, indeed, it might do harm to my business, for there are several elderly single gentlewomen who buy flannel for the poor at my shop, and they are very particular, — as they ought to be, indeed; for morals are very strict in this county, and particularly in this town, where we certainly do pay very high church-rates. Not that I grumble; for, though I am as liberal as any man, I am for an established church, — as I ought to be, since the dean is my best customer. With regard to yourself, I enclose you £10, and you will let me know when it is gone, and I will see what

more I can do. You say you are very poorly, which I am sorry to hear; but you must pluck up your spirits, and take in plain work; and I really think you ought to apply to Mr. Robert Beaufort. He bears a high character; and, notwithstanding your lawsuit, which I cannot approve of, I daresay he might allow you £40 or £50 a year, if you apply properly, which would be the right thing in him. So much for you. As for the boys — poor, fatherless creatures! — it is very hard that they should be so punished for no fault of their own; and my wife, who, though strict, is a good-hearted woman, is ready and willing to do what I wish about them. You say the eldest is near sixteen, and well come on in his studies. I can get him a very good thing in a light, genteel way. My wife's brother, Mr. Christopher Plaskwith, is a bookseller and stationer, with pretty practice, in R——. He is a clever man, and has a newspaper, which he kindly sends me every week; and, though it is not my county, it has some very sensible views, and is often noticed in the London papers, as "our provincial contemporary." Mr. Plaskwith owes me some money, which I advanced him when he set up the paper; and he has several times most honestly offered to pay me, in shares in the said paper. But, as the thing might break, and I don't like concerns I don't understand, I have not taken advantage of his very handsome proposals. Now Plaskwith wrote me word, two days ago, that he wanted a genteel, smart lad, as assistant and 'prentice, and offered to take my eldest boy; but we can't spare him. I write to Christopher by this post; and if your youth will run down on the top of the coach, and inquire for Mr. Plaskwith, — the fare is trifling, — I have no doubt he will be engaged at once. But you will say, "There's the premium to consider!" No such thing; Kit will set off the premium against his debt to me; so you will have nothing to pay. 'Tis a very pretty business; and the lad's education will get him on: so that's off your mind. As to the little chap, I'll take him at once. You say he is a pretty boy; and a pretty boy is always a help in a linen-draper's shop. He shall share and share with my own young folks; and Mrs. Morton will take care of his washing and morals. I con-

clude (this is Mrs. M.'s suggestion) that he has had the measles, cowpock, and whooping-cough, which please let me know. If he behave well, which, at his age, we can easily break him into, he is settled for life. So now you have got rid of two mouths to feed, and have nobody to think of but yourself, which must be a great comfort. Don't forget to write to Mr. Beaufort ; and if he don't do something for you, he's not the gentleman I take him for. But you are my own flesh and blood, and sha'n't starve ; for, though I don't think it right in a man in business to encourage what's wrong, yet, when a person's down in the world, I think an ounce of help is better than a pound of preaching. My wife thinks otherwise, and wants to send you some tracts ; but everybody can't be as correct as some folks. However, as I said before, that's neither here nor there. Let me know when your boy comes down, and also about the measles, cowpock, and whooping-cough ; also if all's right with Mr. Plaskwith. So now I hope you will feel more comfortable ; and remain, dear Catherine, your forgiving and affectionate brother,

ROGER MORTON.

High Street, N—, June 13.

P. S. Mrs. M. says that she will be a mother to your little boy, and that you had better mend up all his linen before you send him.

As Catherine finished this epistle, she lifted her eyes and beheld Philip. He had entered noiselessly, and he remained silent, leaning against the wall, and watching the face of his mother, which crimsoned with painful humiliation while she read. Philip was not now the trim and dainty stripling first introduced to the reader. He had outgrown his faded suit of funereal mourning ; his long-neglected hair hung elf-like and matted down his cheeks ; there was a gloomy look in his bright dark eyes. Poverty never betrays itself more than in the features and forms of pride. It was evident

that his spirit endured, rather than accommodated itself to, his fallen state; and notwithstanding his soiled and threadbare garments, and a haggardness that ill becomes the years of palmy youth, there was about his whole mien and person a wild and savage grandeur more impressive than his former ruffling arrogance of manner.

"Well, mother," said he, with a strange mixture of sternness in his countenance, and pity in his voice, — "well, mother, and what says your brother?"

"You decided for us once before, decide again. But I need not ask you; you would never —"

"I don't know," interrupted Philip, vaguely; "let me see what we are to decide on."

Mrs. Morton was naturally a woman of high courage and spirit, but sickness and grief had worn down both; and though Philip was but sixteen, there is something in the very nature of woman — especially in trouble — which makes her seek to lean on some other will than her own. She gave Philip the letter, and went quietly to sit down by Sidney.

"Your brother means well," said Philip, when he had concluded the epistle.

"Yes, but nothing is to be done; I cannot, cannot send poor Sidney to — to —" and Mrs. Morton sobbed.

"No, my dear, dear mother, no; it would be terrible, indeed, to part you and him. But this bookseller, — Plaskwith, — perhaps I shall be able to support you both."

"Why, you do not think, Philip, of being an apprentice! — you, who have been so brought up, — you, who are so proud!"

"Mother, I would sweep the crossings for your sake! Mother, for your sake, I would go to my uncle Beaufort with my hat in my hand, for halfpence. Mother, I am

not proud, — I would be honest, if I can, — but when I see you pining away, and so changed, the devil comes into me, and I often shudder lest I should commit some crime, what, I don't know! ”

“ Come here, Philip, my own Philip, — my son, my hope, my first-born! ” — and the mother's heart gushed forth in all the fondness of early days. “ Don't speak so terribly, you frighten me! ”

She threw her arms round his neck, and kissed him soothingly. He laid his burning temples on her bosom, and nestled himself to her, as he had been wont to do, after some stormy paroxysm of his passionate and wayward infancy. So there they remained, — their lips silent, their hearts speaking to each other, each from each taking strange succor and holy strength, — till Philip rose, calm, and with a quiet smile, “ Good-by, mother; I will go at once to Mr. Plaskwith. ”

“ But you have no money for the coach-fare; here, Philip,” and she placed her purse in his hand, from which he reluctantly selected a few shillings. “ And mind, if the man is rude, and you dislike him, — mind, you must not subject yourself to insolence and mortification. ”

“ Oh, all will go well, don't fear,” said Philip, cheerfully, and he left the house.

Towards evening he had reached his destination. The shop was of goodly exterior, with a private entrance; over the shop was written, “ Christopher Plaskwith, Bookseller and Stationer: ” on the private door a brass plate, inscribed with “ R—— and —— Mercury Office, Mr. Plaskwith. ” Philip applied at the private entrance, and was shown by a “ neat-handed Phyllis ” into a small office-room. In a few minutes the door opened, and the bookseller entered.

Mr. Christopher Plaskwith was a short, stout man, in drab-colored breeches, and gaiters to match, a black coat and waistcoat; he wore a large watch-chain, with a prodigious bunch of seals, alternated by small keys and old-fashioned mourning-rings. His complexion was pale and sodden, and his hair short, dark, and sleek. The bookseller valued himself on a likeness to Bonaparte, and affected a short, brusque, peremptory manner, which he meant to be the indication of the vigorous and decisive character of his prototype.

"So you are the young gentleman Mr. Roger Morton recommends?" Here Mr. Plaskwith took out a huge pocketbook, slowly unclasped it, staring hard at Philip, with what he designed for a piercing and penetrative survey.

"This is the letter, — no! this is Sir Thomas Chamberdown's order for fifty copies of the last 'Mercury,' containing his speech at the county meeting. Your age, young man? — only sixteen! — look older: that's not it; that's not it; and this *is* it! — sit down. Yes, Mr. Roger Morton recommends you — a relation — unfortunate circumstances — well-educated — hum! Well, young man, what have you to say for yourself?"

"Sir?"

"Can you cast accounts? — know book-keeping?"

"I know something of algebra, sir."

"Algebra! — oh, what else?"

"French and Latin."

"Hum! — may be useful. Why do you wear your hair so long? — look at mine. What's your name?"

"Philip Morton."

"Mr. Philip Morton, you have an intelligent countenance, — I go a great deal by countenances. You know the terms? — most favorable to you. No premium, —

I settle that with Roger. I give board and bed, — find your own washing. Habits regular, — 'prenticeship only five years; when over, must not set up in the same town. I will see to the indentures. When can you come?"

"When you please, sir."

"Day after to-morrow, by six-o'clock coach."

"But, sir," said Philip, "will there be no salary? — something, ever so small, that I could send to my mother?"

"Salary, at sixteen? — board and bed, — no premium! Salary, what for? 'Prentices have no salary! — you will have every comfort."

"Give me less comfort, that I may give my mother more, — a little money, ever so little, and take it out of my board. I can do with one meal a day, sir."

The bookseller was moved; he took a huge pinchful of snuff out of his waistcoat pocket, and mused a moment. He then said as he re-examined Philip, —

"Well, young man, I'll tell you what we will do. You shall come here first upon trial? — see if we like each other before we sign the indentures: allow you, meanwhile, five shillings a week. If you show talent, will see if I and Roger can settle about some little allowance. That do, eh?"

"I thank you, sir, yes," said Philip, gratefully.

"Agreed, then. Follow me, — present you to Mrs. P."

Thus saying, Mr. Plaskwith returned the letter to the pocketbook, and the pocketbook to the pocket; and, putting his arms behind his coat tails, threw up his chin, and strode through the passage into a small parlor, that looked upon a small garden. Here, seated round the table, were a thin lady, with a squint (Mrs. Plaskwith); two little girls (the Misses Plaskwith), also

with squints, — and pinafores; a young man of three or four and twenty, in nankeen trousers, a little the worse for washing, and a black velveteen jacket and waistcoat. This young gentleman was very much freckled; wore his hair, which was dark and wiry, up at one side, down at the other; had a short, thick nose; full lips; and, when close to him, smelled of cigars. Such was Mr. Plimmins, Mr. Plaskwith's *factotum*, foreman in the shop, assistant-editor to the "Mercury." Mr. Plaskwith formally went the round of the introduction; Mrs. P. nodded her head; the Misses P. nudged each other, and grinned; Mr. Plimmins passed his hand through his hair, glanced at the glass, and bowed very politely.

"Now, Mrs. P., my second cup, and give Mr. Morton *his* dish of tea. Must be tired, sir, — hot day. Jemima, ring, — no, go to the stairs, and call out, 'More buttered toast.' That's the shorter way, — promptitude is my rule in life, Mr. Morton. Pray — hum, hum — have you ever, by chance, studied the biography of the great Napoleon Bonaparte?"

Mr. Plimmins gulped down his tea, and kicked Philip under the table. Philip looked fiercely at the foreman, and replied, sullenly, "No, sir."

"That's a pity. Napoleon Bonaparte was a very great man, — very! You have seen his cast? — there it is, on the dumb-waiter! Look at it! see a likeness, eh?"

"Likeness, sir? I never saw Napoleon Bonaparte."

"Never saw *him*? No! just look round the room. Who does that bust put you in mind of; who does it resemble?"

Here Mr. Plaskwith rose, and placed himself in an attitude; his hand in his waistcoat, and his face pen-



sively inclined towards the tea-table. "Now fancy me at St. Helena; this table is the ocean. Now then, who is that cast like, Mr. Philip Morton?"

"I suppose, sir, it is like you!"

"Ah, that it is! strikes every one! Does it not, Mrs. P., does it not? And when you have known me longer, you will find a moral similitude, — a moral, sir! Straightforward, short, to the point, bold, determined!"

"Bless me, Mr. P.!" said Mrs. Plaskwith, very querulously, "do make haste with your tea; the young gentleman, I suppose, wants to go home, and the coach passes in a quarter of an hour."

"Have you seen Kean in Richard III., Mr. Morton?" asked Mr. Plimmins.

"I have never seen a play."

"Never seen a play! How very odd!"

"Not at all odd, Mr. Plimmins," said the stationer. "Mr. Morton has known troubles, — so hand him the hot toast."

Silent and morose, but rather disdainful than sad, Philip listened to the babble round him, and observed the ungenial characters with which he was to associate. He cared not to please (*that*, alas! had never been especially his study); it was enough for him if he could see, stretching to his mind's eye beyond the walls of that dull room, the long vistas into fairer fortune. At sixteen, what sorrow can freeze the hope, or what prophetic fear whisper "fool" to the ambition? He would bear back into ease and prosperity, if not into affluence and station, the dear ones left at home. From the eminence of five shillings a week, he looked over the Promised Land.

At length Mr. Plaskwith, pulling out his watch, said, "Just in time to catch the coach; make your bow

and be off, — smart 's the word!" Philip rose, took up his hat, made a stiff bow that included the whole group, and vanished with his host.

Mrs. Plaskwith breathed more easily when he was gone.

"I never seed a more odd, fierce, ill-bred-looking young man! I declare I am quite afraid of him. What an eye he has!"

"Uncommonly dark; what, I may say, gypsy-like," said Mr. Plimmins.

"He! he! you always do say such good things, Plimmins. Gypsy-like! he! he! So he is! I wonder if he can tell fortunes?"

"He'll be long before he has a fortune of his own to tell. Ha! ha!" said Plimmins.

"He! he! how *very* good! you are *so* pleasant, Plimmins."

While these strictures on his appearance were still going on, Philip had already ascended the roof of the coach, and, waving his hand with the condescension of old times, to his future master, was carried away by the "Express" in a whirlwind of dust.

"A very warm evening, sir," said a passenger seated at his right, puffing, while he spoke, from a short German pipe, a volume of smoke into Philip's face.

"Very warm. Be so good as to smoke into the face of the gentleman on the other side of you," returned Philip, petulantly.

"Ho, ho!" replied the passenger, with a loud, powerful laugh, — the laugh of a strong man. "You don't take to the pipe yet; you will by-and-by, when you have known the cares and anxieties that I have gone through. A pipe! — it is a great soother! — a pleasant comforter! Blue-devils fly before its honest breath!

It ripens the brain, — it opens the heart; and the man who smokes thinks like a sage, and acts like a Samaritan!"

Roused from his reverie by this quaint and unexpected declamation, Philip turned his quick glance at his neighbor. He saw a man of great bulk, and immense physical power, — broad-shouldered, deep-chested, not corpulent, but taking the same girth from bone and muscle that a corpulent man does from flesh. He wore a blue coat, — frogged, braided, and buttoned to the throat. A broad-brimmed straw hat, set on one side, gave a jaunty appearance to a countenance which, notwithstanding its jovial complexion and smiling mouth, had, in repose, a bold and decided character. It was a face well suited to the frame, inasmuch as it betokened a mind capable of wielding and mastering the brute physical force of body, light eyes of piercing intelligence, rough, but resolute and striking features, and a jaw of iron. There was thought, there was power, there was passion, in the shaggy brow, the deep-ploughed lines, the dilated nostril, and the restless play of the lips. Philip looked hard and gravely, and the man returned his look.

"What do you think of me, young gentleman?" asked the passenger, as he replaced the pipe in his mouth. "I am a fine-looking man, am I not?"

"You seem a strange one."

"Strange! Ay, I puzzle you, as I have done, and shall do many. You cannot read me as easily as I can read you. Come, shall I guess at your character and circumstances? You are a gentleman, or something like it, by birth: that the tone of your voice tells me. You are poor, devilish poor: that the hole in your coat assures me. You are proud, fiery, discontented, and

unhappy: all that I see in your face. It was because I saw those signs that I spoke to you. I volunteer no acquaintance with the happy."

"I daresay not; for if you know all the unhappy, you must have a sufficiently large acquaintance," returned Philip.

"Your wit is beyond your years! What is your calling, if the question does not offend you?"

"I have none as yet," said Philip, with a slight sigh, and a deep blush.

"More's the pity!" grunted the smoker, with a long, emphatic, nasal intonation. "I should have judged that you were a raw recruit in the camp of the enemy."

"Enemy! I don't understand you."

"In other words, a plant growing out of a lawyer's desk. I will explain. There is one class of spiders, industrious, hard-working octopedes, who, out of the sweat of their brains (I take it, by the by, that a spider must have a fine craniological development), make their own webs, and catch their own flies. There is another class of spiders who have no stuff in them wherewith to make webs; they, therefore, wander about, looking out for food provided by the toil of their neighbors. Whenever they come to the web of a smaller spider, whose larder seems well supplied, they rush upon his domain, pursue him to his hole, eat him up if they can, reject him if he is too tough for their maws, and quietly possess themselves of all the legs and wings they find dangling in his meshes; these spiders I call enemies, — the world calls them lawyers!"

Philip laughed: "And who are the first class of spiders?"

"Honest creatures who openly confess that they live upon flies. Lawyers fall foul upon them, under pre-

tence of delivering flies from their clutches. They are wonderful blood-suckers, these lawyers, in spite of all their hypocrisy. Ha! ha! Ho! ho!"

And with a loud, rough chuckle, more expressive of malignity than mirth, the man turned himself round, applied vigorously to his pipe, and sank into a silence which, as mile after mile glided past the wheels, he did not seem disposed to break. Neither was Philip inclined to be communicative. Considerations for his own state and prospects swallowed up the curiosity he might otherwise have felt as to his singular neighbor. He had not touched food since the early morning. Anxiety had made him insensible to hunger, till he arrived at Mr. Plaskwith's; and then, feverish, sore, and sick at heart, the sight of the luxuries gracing the tea-table only revolted him. He did not now feel hunger, but he was fatigued and faint. For several nights, the sleep which youth can so ill dispense with had been broken and disturbed; and now, the rapid motion of the coach, and the free current of a fresher and more exhausting air than he had been accustomed to for many months, began to operate on his nerves like the intoxication of a narcotic. His eyes grew heavy; indistinct mists, through which there seemed to glare the various squints of the female Plaskwiths, succeeded the gliding road and the dancing trees. His head fell on his bosom, and thence, instinctively seeking the strongest support at hand, inclined towards the stout smoker, and finally nestled itself composedly on that gentleman's shoulder. The passenger, feeling this unwelcome and unsolicited weight, took the pipe, which he had already thrice refilled, from his lips, and emitted an angry and impatient snort; finding that this produced no effect, and that the load grew heavier as the boy's sleep grew

deeper, he cried, in a loud voice, "Hallo! I did not pay my fare to be your bolster, young man!" and shook himself lustily. Philip started, and would have fallen sidelong from the coach, if his neighbor had not gripped him hard with a hand that could have kept a young oak from falling.

"Rouse yourself! — you might have had an ugly tumble."

Philip muttered something inaudible, between sleeping and waking, and turned his dark eyes towards the man; in that glance there was so much unconscious, but sad and deep reproach, that the passenger felt touched and ashamed. Before, however, he could say anything in apology or conciliation, Philip had again fallen asleep. But this time, as if he had felt and resented the rebuff he had received, he inclined his head away from his neighbor, against the edge of a box on the roof, — a dangerous pillow, from which any sudden jolt might transfer him to the road below.

"Poor lad! — he looks pale!" muttered the man, and he knocked the weed from his pipe, which he placed gently in his pocket. "Perhaps the smoke was too much for him, — he seems ill and thin;" and he took the boy's long, lean fingers in his own. "His cheek is hollow! — what do I know but it may be with fasting? Pooh! I was a brute. Hush, coachee, hush! don't talk so loud, and be d—d to you, — he will certainly be off;" and the man softly and creepingly encircled the boy's waist with his huge arm. "Now then, to shift his head; so — so: that's right." Philip's sallow cheek and long hair were now tenderly lapped on the soliloquist's bosom. "Poor wretch! he smiles; perhaps he is thinking of home, and the butterflies he ran after when he was an urchin, — they never come back, those

days, — never, never, never! I think the wind veers to the east: he may catch cold;" and with that, the man, sliding the head for a moment, and with the tenderness of a woman, from his breast to his shoulder, unbuttoned his coat (as he replaced the weight, no longer unwelcome, in its former part), and drew the lappets closely round the slender frame of the sleeper, exposing his own sturdy breast — for he wore no waistcoat — to the sharpening air. Thus cradled on that stranger's bosom, wrapped from the present, and dreaming perhaps — while a heart scorched by fierce and terrible struggles with life and sin made his pillow — of a fair and unsullied future, slept the fatherless and friendless boy.

## CHAPTER VII.

*Constance.* — My life, my joy, my food, my all the world,  
My widow-comfort.

*King John.*

AMIDST the glare of lamps, the rattle of carriages, the lumbering of carts and wagons, the throng, the clamor, the reeking life, and dissonant roar of London, Philip woke from his happy sleep. He woke, uncertain and confused, and saw strange eyes bent on him kindly and watchfully.

"You have slept well, my lad!" said the passenger, in the deep ringing voice which made itself heard above all the noises round.

"And you have suffered me to incommode you thus?" said Philip, with more gratitude in his voice and look than, perhaps, he had shown to any one out of his own family since his birth.

"You have had but little kindness shown you, my poor boy, if you think so much of this."

"No; all people were very kind to me once. I did not value it then." Here the coach rolled heavily down the dark arch of the inn-yard.

"Take care of yourself, my boy! You look ill;" and in the dark, the man slipped a sovereign into Philip's hand.

"I don't want money. Though I thank you heartily all the same; it would be a shame at my age to be a beggar. But can you think of an employment where I can make something? — what they offer me is so trifling.



I have a mother and a brother, — a mere child, sir, — at home."

"Employment!" repeated the man; and as the coach now stopped at the tavern-door, the light from the lamp fell full on his marked face. "Ay, I know of employment; but you should apply to some one else to obtain it for you! As for me, it is not likely that we shall meet again!"

"I am sorry for that! What and who are you?" asked Philip, with a rude and blunt curiosity.

"Me!" returned the passenger, with his deep laugh; "Oh! I know some people who call me an honest fellow. Take the employment offered you, no matter how trifling the wages, — keep out of harm's way. Good-night to you!"

So saying, he quickly descended from the roof, and, as he was directing the coachman where to look for his carpet-bag, Philip saw three or four well-dressed men make up to him, shake him heartily by the hand, and welcome him with great seeming cordiality.

Philip sighed. "He has friends," he muttered to himself; and, paying his fare, he turned from the bustling yard, and took his solitary way home.

A week after his visit to R——, Philip was settled on his probation at Mr. Plaskwith's, and Mrs. Morton's health was so decidedly worse, that she resolved to know her fate, and consult a physician. The oracle was at first ambiguous in its response. But when Mrs. Morton said firmly, "I have duties to perform; upon your candid answer rest my plans with respect to my children, left, if I die suddenly, destitute in the world," — the doctor looked hard in her face, saw its calm resolution, and replied frankly, —

"Lose no time, then, in arranging your plans; life is

uncertain with all, — with you, especially; you may live some time yet, but your constitution is much shaken. I fear there is water on the chest. No, ma'am, — no fee. I will see you again."

The physician turned to Sidney, who played with his watch-chain, and smiled up in his face.

"And that child, sir?" said the mother, wistfully, forgetting the dread fiat pronounced against herself, — "he is so delicate!"

"Not at all, ma'am, — a very fine little fellow;" and the doctor patted the boy's head, and abruptly vanished.

"Ah! mamma, I wish you would ride, — I wish you would take the white pony."

"Poor boy! poor boy!" muttered the mother; "I must not be selfish." She covered her face with her hands, and began to think.

Could she, thus doomed, resolve on declining her brother's offer? Did it not, at least, secure bread and shelter to her child? When she was dead, might not a tie between the uncle and nephew be snapped asunder? Would he be as kind to the boy as now, when she should commend him with her own lips to his care, — when she could place that precious charge into his hands? With these thoughts, she formed one of those resolutions which have all the strength of self-sacrificing love. She would put the boy from her, her last solace and comfort; she would die alone — alone!

## CHAPTER VIII.

*Constance.* — When I shall meet him in the court of heaven,  
I shall not know him.

*King John*

ONE evening, the shop closed and the business done, Mr. Roger Morton and his family sat in that snug and comfortable retreat which generally backs the warerooms of an English tradesman. Happy often, and indeed happy, is that little sanctuary, near to, and yet remote from, the toil and care of the busy-mart from which its homely ease and peaceful security are drawn. Glance down those rows of silenced shops in a town at night, and picture the glad and quiet groups gathered within, over that nightly and social meal which custom has banished from the more indolent tribes who neither toil nor spin. Placed between the two extremes of life, the tradesman who ventures not beyond his means, and sees clear books and sure gains, with enough of occupation to give healthful excitement, enough of fortune to greet each new-born child without a sigh, might be envied alike by those above and those below his state, — if the restless heart of man ever envied content!

“And so the little boy is not to come?” said Mrs. Morton, as she crossed her knife and fork, and pushed away her plate, in token that she had done supper.

“I don’t know. Children, go to bed; there — there: that will do. Good-night! — Catherine does not say either yes or no. She wants time to consider.”

"It was a very handsome offer on our part; some folks never know when they are well off."

"That is very true, my dear, and you are a very sensible person. Kate herself might have been an honest woman, and, what is more, a very rich woman, by this time. She might have married Spencer, the young brewer, — an excellent man, and well-to-do!"

"Spencer! I don't remember him."

"No; after she went off he retired from business, and left the place. I don't know what's become of him. He was mightily taken with her, to be sure. She was uncommonly handsome, my sister Catherine."

"Handsome is as handsome does, Mr. Morton," said the wife, who was very much marked with the small-pox. "We all have our temptations and trials; this is a vale of tears, and without grace we are whited sepulchres."

Mr. Morton mixed his brandy-and-water, and moved his chair into its customary corner.

"You saw your brother's letter," said he, after a pause; "he gives young Philip a very good character."

"The human heart is very deceitful," replied Mrs. Morton, who, by the way, spoke through her nose. "Pray Heaven he may be what he seems; but what's bred in the bone comes out in the flesh."

"We must hope the best," said Mr. Morton, mildly; "and — put another lump into the grog, my dear."

"It is a mercy, I'm thinking, that we did n't have the other little boy. I daresay he has never even been taught his catechism: them people don't know what it is to be a mother. And, besides, it would have been very awkward, Mr. M., we could never have said who he was; and I've no doubt Miss Pryinall would have been very curious."

"Miss Pryinall be —" Mr. Morton checked himself, took a large draught of the brandy-and-water, and added, "Miss Pryinall wants to have a finger in everybody's pie."

"But she buys a deal of flannel, and does great good to the town; it was she who found out that Mrs. Giles was no better than she should be."

"Poor Mrs. Giles! — she came to the workhouse."

"Poor Mrs. Giles, indeed! I wonder, Mr. Morton, that you, a married man with a family, should say *poor* Mrs. Giles!"

"My dear, when people who have been well off come to the workhouse, they may be called poor. But that's neither here nor there; only, if the boy does come to us, we must look sharp upon Miss Pryinall."

"I hope he won't come, — it will be very unpleasant. And when a man has a wife and family, the less he meddles with other folks and their little ones the better. For, as the Scripture says, 'A man shall cleave to his wife and —'"

Here a sharp, shrill ring at the bell was heard, and Mrs. Morton broke off into, —

"Well! I declare! at this hour; who can that be? And all gone to bed! Do go and see, Mr. Morton."

Somewhat reluctantly and slowly Mr. Morton rose, and, proceeding to the passage, unbarred the door. A brief and muttered conversation followed, to the great irritability of Mrs. Morton, who stood in the passage, — the candle in her hand.

"What is the matter, Mr. M.?"

Mr. Morton turned back, looking agitated.

"Where's my hat? — oh, here. My sister is come, at the inn."

"Gracious me! She does not go for to say she is *your* sister?"

"No, no: here 's her note, — calls herself a lady that 's ill. I shall be back soon."

"She can't come here; she sha'n't come here, Mr. M. I'm an honest woman; she can't come here. You understand —"

Mr. Morton had naturally a stern countenance, stern to every one but his wife. The shrill tone to which he was so long accustomed jarred then on his heart as well as ear. He frowned, —

"Pshaw! woman, you have no feeling!" said he, and walked out of the house, pulling his hat over his brows.

That was the only rude speech Mr. Morton had ever made to his better half. She treasured it up in her heart and memory; it was associated with the sister and the child; and she was not a woman who ever forgave.

Mr. Morton walked rapidly through the still, moonlit streets till he reached the inn. A club was held that night in one of the rooms below; and as he crossed the threshold the sound of "hip — hip — hurrah!" mingled with the stamping of feet and the jingling of glasses, saluted his entrance. He was a stiff, sober, respectable man, — a man who, except at elections (he was a great politician), mixed in none of the revels of his more boisterous townsmen. The sounds, the spot, were ungenial to him. He paused, and the color of shame rose to his brow. He was ashamed to be there, — ashamed to meet the desolate and, as he believed, erring sister.

A pretty maid-servant, heated and flushed with orders and compliments, crossed his path with a tray full of glasses.

"There 's a lady come by the Telegraph?"

"Yes, sir, upstairs, No. 2, Mr. Morton."

*Mr. Morton!* He shrank at the sound of his own name. "My wife's right," he muttered. "After all, this is more unpleasant than I thought for."

The slight stairs shook under his hasty tread. He opened the door of No. 2, and that Catherine, whom he had last seen at her age of gay sixteen, radiant with bloom, and, but for her air of pride, the model for a Hebe; that Catherine, old ere youth was gone, pale, faded, the dark hair silvered over, the cheeks hollow, and the eye dim, — that Catherine fell upon his breast!

"God bless you, brother! How kind to come! How long since we have met!"

"Sit down, Catherine, my dear sister. You are faint; you are very much changed, — very. I should not have known you."

"Brother, I have brought my boy; it is painful to part from him, — very, very painful: but it is right, and God's will be done." She turned, as she spoke, towards a little, deformed, rickety dwarf of a sofa, that seemed to hide itself in the darkest corner of the low, gloomy room; and Morton followed her. With one hand she removed the shawl that she had thrown over the child, and placing the forefinger of the other upon her lips, — lips that smiled *then*, — she whispered, "We will not wake him, he is so tired. But I would not put him to bed till you had seen him."

And there slept poor Sidney, his fair cheek pillowed on his arm; the soft, silky ringlets thrown from the delicate and unclouded brow; the natural bloom increased by warmth and travel; the lovely face so innocent and hushed; the breathing so gentle and regular, as if never broken by a sigh.

Mr. Morton drew his hand across his eyes.

There was something very touching in the contrast between that wakeful, anxious, forlorn woman, and the slumber of the unconscious boy. And in that moment, what breast upon which the light of Christian pity, of natural affection, had ever dawned, would, even supposing the world's judgment were true, have recalled Catherine's reputed error? There is so divine a holiness in the love of a mother, that, no matter how the tie that binds her to the child was formed, she becomes, as it were, consecrated and sacred; and the past is forgotten, and the world and its harsh verdicts swept away, when *that* love alone is visible; and the God who watches over the little one sheds His smile over the human deputy in whose tenderness there breathes His own.

"You will be kind to him, will you not?" said Mrs. Morton, and the appeal was made with that trustful, almost cheerful tone which implies, "Who would not be kind to a thing so fair and helpless?" "He is very sensitive and very docile; you will never have occasion to say a hard word to him, — never! you have children of your own, brother?"

"He is a beautiful boy, — beautiful. I will be a father to him!"

As he spoke, the recollection of his wife — sour, querulous, austere — came over him; but he said to himself, "She must take to such a child, — women always take to beauty."

He bent down and gently pressed his lips to Sidney's forehead: Mrs. Morton replaced the shawl, and drew her brother to the other end of the room.

"And now," she said, coloring as she spoke, "I must see your wife, brother; there is so much to say about a child that only a woman will recollect. Is she very



good-tempered and kind, your wife? You know I never saw her; you married after — after I left."

"She is a very worthy woman," said Mr. Morton, clearing his throat, "and brought me some money. She has a will of her own, as most women have; but that's neither here nor there, — she is a good wife as wives go, and prudent and painstaking; I don't know what I should do without her."

"Brother, I have one favor to request, — a great favor."

"Anything I can do in the way of money?"

"It has nothing to do with money. I can't live long, — don't shake your head, — I can't live long. I have no fear for Philip, he has so much spirit, such strength of character, — but *that child!* I cannot bear to leave him altogether. Let me stay in this town, — I can lodge anywhere; but to see him sometimes, to know I shall be in reach if he is ill, — let me stay here, let me die here!"

"You must not talk so sadly. You are young yet, — younger than I am; I don't think of dying."

"Heaven forbid! but —"

"Well — well," interrupted Mr. Morton, who began to fear his feelings would hurry him into some promise which his wife would not suffer him to keep; "you shall talk to Margaret, — that is, Mrs. Morton: I will get her to see you, — yes, I think I can contrive that; and if you can arrange with her to stay, — but you see, as she brought the money, and is a very particular woman —"

"I will see her; thank you, thank you: she cannot refuse me."

"And, brother," resumed Mrs. Morton, after a short pause, and speaking in a firm voice, — "and is it possible

that you disbelieve my story; that you, like all the rest, consider my children the sons of shame?"

There was an honest earnestness in Catherine's voice, as she spoke, that might have convinced many. But Mr. Morton was a man of facts, a practical man, — a man who believed that law was always right, and that the improbable was never true.

He looked down as he answered, "I think you have been a very ill-used woman, Catherine, and that is all I can say on the matter: let us drop the subject."

"No! I was not ill-used; my husband, — yes, my husband was noble and generous from first to last. It was for the sake of his children's prospects, for the expectations they, through him, might derive from his proud uncle, that he concealed our marriage. Do not blame Philip, — do not condemn the dead."

"I don't want to blame any one," said Mr. Morton, rather angrily. "I am a plain man, — a tradesman, and can only go by what in my class seems fair and honest, which I can't think Mr. Beaufort's conduct was, put it how you will. If he marries you as you think, he gets rid of a witness, he destroys a certificate, and he dies without a will. However, all that's neither here nor there. You do quite right not to take the name of Beaufort, since it is an uncommon name, and would always make the story public. Least said soonest mended. You must always consider that your children will be called natural children, and have their own way to make. No harm in that! Warm day for your journey." Catherine sighed, and wiped her eyes; she no longer reproached the world since the son of her own mother disbelieved her.

The relations talked together for some minutes on the past, the present; but there was embarrassment and

constraint on both sides, — it was so difficult to avoid one subject; and after sixteen years of absence, there is little left in common, even between those who once played together round their parents' knees. Mr. Morton was glad at last to find an excuse in Catherine's fatigue to leave her. "Cheer up, and take a glass of something warm before you go to bed. Good-night!" these were his parting words.

Long was the conference, and sleepless the couch of Mr. and Mrs. Morton. At first that estimable lady positively declared she would not and could not visit Catherine (as to receiving her, that was out of the question). But she secretly resolved to give up that point in order to insist with greater strength upon another, — namely, the impossibility of Catherine remaining in the town. Such concession for the purpose of resistance being a very common and sagacious policy with married ladies. Accordingly, when suddenly, and with a good grace, Mrs. Morton appeared affected by her husband's eloquence, and said, "Well, poor thing! if she is so ill, and you wish it so much, I will call to-morrow." Mr. Morton felt his heart softened towards the many excellent reasons which his wife urged against allowing Catherine to reside in the town. He was a political character; he had many enemies; the story of his seduced sister, now forgotten, would certainly be raked up; it would affect his comfort, perhaps his trade, certainly his eldest daughter who was now thirteen; it would be impossible then to adopt the plan hitherto resolved upon, — of passing off Sidney as the legitimate orphan of a distant relation; it would be made a great handle for gossip by Miss Pryinall. Added to all these reasons, one not less strong occurred to Mr. Morton himself, — the uncommon and merciless rigidity of

his wife would render all the other women in the town very glad of any topic that would humble her own sense of immaculate propriety. Moreover, he saw that if Catherine did remain, it would be a perpetual source of irritation in his own home; he was a man who liked an easy life, and avoided, as far as possible, all food for domestic worry. And thus, when at length the wedded pair turned back to back, and composed themselves to sleep, the conditions of peace were settled, and the weaker party, as usual in diplomacy, sacrificed to the interests of the united powers.

After breakfast the next morning Mrs. Morton saluted out on her husband's arm. Mr. Morton was rather a handsome man, with an air and look grave, composed, severe, that had tended much to raise his character in the town. Mrs. Morton was short, wiry, and bony. She had won her husband by making desperate love to him, to say nothing of a dower that enabled him to extend his business, new front, as well as new stock, his shop, and rise into the very first rank of tradesmen in his native town. He still believed that she was excessively fond of him, — a common delusion of husbands, especially when henpecked. Mrs. Morton *was*, perhaps, fond of him in her own way; for though her heart was not warm, there may be a great deal of fondness with very little feeling. The worthy lady was now clothed in her best. She had a proper pride in showing the rewards that belong to female virtue. Flowers adorned her Leghorn bonnet, and her green silk gown boasted four flounces, — such then was, I am told, the fashion. She wore, also, a very handsome black shawl, extremely heavy, though the day was oppressively hot, and with a deep border; a smart *seigné* brooch of yellow topazes glittered in her breast; a huge

gilt serpent glared from her waist-band; her hair, or more properly speaking her *front*, was tortured into very tight curls, and her feet into very tight, half-laced boots, from which the fragrance of new leather had not yet departed. It was this last infliction, for *il faut souffrir pour être belle*, which somewhat yet more acerbated the ordinary acid of Mrs. Morton's temper. The sweetest disposition is ruffled when the shoe pinches; and it so happened that Mrs. Roger Morton was one of those ladies who always have chilblains in the winter and corns in the summer.

"So you say your sister is a beauty?"

"*Was* a beauty, Mrs. M., — *was* a beauty. People alter."

"A bad conscience, Mr. Morton, is —"

"My dear, can't you walk faster?"

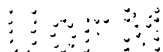
"If you had my corns, Mr. Morton, you would not talk in that way!"

The happy pair sank into silence, only broken by sundry "How d'ye do's?" and "Good mornings!" interchanged with their friends, till they arrived at the inn.

"Let us go up quickly," said Mrs. Morton.

And quiet, — quiet to gloom, did the inn, so noisy over-night, seem by morning. The shutters partially closed to keep out the sun, the tap-room deserted, the passage smelling of stale smoke, an elderly dog, lazily snapping at the flies, at the foot of the staircase, — not a soul to be seen at the bar. The husband and wife, glad to be unobserved, crept on tiptoe up the stairs, and entered Catherine's apartment.

Catherine was seated on the sofa, and Sidney — dressed, like Mrs. Roger Morton, to look his prettiest, nor yet aware of the change that awaited his destiny, but



pleased at the excitement of seeing new friends, as handsome children sure of praise and petting usually are — stood by her side.

"My wife, — Catherine," said Mr. Morton. Catherine rose eagerly, and gazed searchingly on her sister-in-law's hard face. She swallowed the convulsive rising at her heart as she gazed, and stretched out both her hands, not so much to welcome as to plead. Mrs. Roger Morton drew herself up, and then dropped a courtesy: it was an involuntary piece of good-breeding, — it was extorted by the noble countenance, the matronly mien of Catherine, different from what she had anticipated; she dropped the courtesy, and Catherine took her hand and pressed it.

"This is my son;" she turned away her head. Sidney advanced towards his protectress who was to be, and Mrs. Roger muttered, —

"Come here, my dear! A fine little boy!"

"As fine a child as ever I saw!" said Mr. Morton, heartily, as he took Sidney on his lap, and stroked down his golden hair.

This displeased Mrs. Roger Morton; but she sat herself down, and said it was "very warm."

"Now go to that lady, my dear," said Mr. Morton. "Is she not a very nice lady? — don't you think you shall like her very much?"

Sidney, the best-mannered child in the world, went boldly up to Mrs. Morton, as he was bid. Mrs. Morton was embarrassed. Some folks are so with other folk's children: a child either removes all constraint from a party, or it increases the constraint tenfold. Mrs. Morton, however, forced a smile, and said, "I have a little boy at home about your age."

"Have you?" exclaimed Catherine, eagerly; and, as

if that confession made them friends at once, she drew a chair close to her sister-in-law's: "My brother has told you all?"

"Yes, ma'am."

"And I shall stay here, — in the town somewhere, — and see him sometimes?"

Mrs. Roger Morton glanced at her husband; her husband glanced at the door, — and Catherine's quick eye turned from one to the other.

"Mr. Morton will explain, ma'am," said the wife.

"E-hem! — Catherine, my dear, I am afraid *that* is out of the question," — began Mr. Morton, who, when fairly put to it, could be business-like enough. "You see bygones are bygones and it is no use raking them up. But many people in the town will recollect you."

"No one will see me, — no one, but you and Sidney."

"It will be sure to creep out; won't it, Mrs. Morton?"

"Quite sure. Indeed, ma'am, it is impossible. Mr. Morton is so very respectable, and his neighbors pay so much attention to all he does; and then, if we have an election in the autumn, you see, ma'am, he has a great stake in the place, and is a public character."

"That's neither here nor there," said Mr. Morton.

"But I say, Catherine, can your little boy go into the other room for a moment? Margaret, suppose you take him and make friends."

Delighted to throw on her husband the burden of explanation, which she had originally meant to have all the importance of giving herself in her most proper and patronizing manner, Mrs. Morton twisted her fingers into the boy's hand, and, opening the door that communicated with the bedroom, left the brother and sister alone. And then Mr. Morton, with more tact and

delicacy than might have been expected from him, began to soften to Catherine the hardship of the separation he urged. He dwelt principally on what was best for the child. Boys were so brutal in their intercourse with each other. He had even thought it better to represent Philip to Mr. Plaskwith as a more distant relation than he was; and he begged, by the by, that Catherine would tell Philip to take the hint. But as for Sidney, sooner or later, *he* would go to a day-school, — have companions of his own age; if his birth were known, he would be exposed to many mortifications, — so much better, and so very easy, to bring him up as the lawful, that is the *legal* offspring of some distant relation.

“And,” cried poor Catherine, clasping her hands, “when I am dead, is he never to know that I was his mother?”

The anguish of that question thrilled the heart of the listener. He was affected below all the surface that worldly thoughts and habits had laid, stratum by stratum, over the humanities within. He threw his arms round Catherine, and strained her to his breast, —

“No, my sister, my poor sister, he shall know it when he is old enough to understand and to keep his own secret. He shall know, too, how we all loved and prized you once; how young you were, how flattered and tempted; how you were deceived, for I know *that*, — on my soul I do: I know it was not your fault. He shall know, too, how fondly you loved your child, and how you sacrificed, for his sake, the very comfort of being near him. He shall know it all — all!”

“My brother — my brother, I resign him: I am content. God reward you. I will go, — go quickly. I know you will take care of him now.”



"And you see," resumed Mr. Morton, re-settling himself, and wiping his eyes, "it is best, between you and me, that Mrs. Morton should have her own way in this. She is a very good woman, — very; but it's prudent not to vex her. You may come in now, Mrs. Morton."

Mrs. Morton and Sidney reappeared.

"We have settled it all," said the husband. "When can we have him?"

"Not to-day," said Mrs. Roger Morton; "you see, ma'am, we must get his bed ready, and his sheets well aired, — I am very particular."

"Certainly, certainly. Will he sleep alone? — pardon me."

"He shall have a room to himself," said Mr. Morton. "Eh, my dear? Next to Martha's. Martha is our parlor-maid, — very good-natured girl, and fond of children."

Mrs. Morton looked grave, thought a moment, and said, "Yes, he can have that room."

"Who can have that room?" asked Sidney, innocently.

"You, my dear," replied Mr. Morton.

"And where will mamma sleep? I must sleep near mamma."

"Mamma is going away," said Catherine in a firm voice, in which the despair would only have been felt by the acute ear of sympathy, — "going away for a little time; but this gentleman and lady will be very, very kind to you."

"We will do our best, ma'am," said Mrs. Morton.

And as she spoke, a sudden light broke on the boy's mind; he uttered a loud cry, broke from his aunt, rushed to his mother's breast, and hid his face there, sobbing bitterly.

"I am afraid he has been very much spoiled," whispered Mrs. Roger Morton. "I don't think we need stay longer; it will look suspicious. Good morning, ma'am; we shall be ready to-morrow."

"Good-by, Catherine," said Mr. Morton; and he added, as he kissed her; "be of good heart, I will come up by myself and spend the evening with you."

It was the night after this interview. Sidney had gone to his new home; they had been all kind to him, — Mr. Morton, the children, Martha the parlor-maid. Mrs. Roger herself had given him a large slice of bread and jam, but had looked gloomy all the rest of the evening, because, like a dog in a strange place, he refused to eat. His little heart was full, and his eyes, swimming with tears, were turned at every moment to the door. But he did not show the violent grief that might have been expected. His very desolation, amidst the unfamiliar faces, awed and chilled him. But when Martha took him to bed, and undressed him, and he knelt down to say his prayers, and came to the words, "Pray God bless dear mamma, and make me a good child," his heart could contain itself no longer, and he sobbed with a passion that alarmed the good-natured servant. She had been used, however, to children, and she soothed and caressed him, and told him of all the nice things he would do, and the nice toys he would have; and at last, silenced, if not convinced, his eyes closed, and, the tears yet wet on their lashes, he fell asleep.

It had been arranged that Catherine should return home that night by a late coach, which left the town at twelve. It was already past eleven. Mrs. Morton had retired to bed; and her husband, who had, according to his wont, lingered behind to smoke a cigar over

his last glass of brandy-and-water, had just thrown aside the stump, and was winding up his watch, when he heard a low tap at his window. He stood mute and alarmed, for the window opened on a back lane, dark and solitary at night, and, from the heat of the weather the iron-cased shutter was not yet closed; the sound was repeated, and he heard a faint voice. He glanced at the poker and then cautiously moved to the window and looked forth, "Who 's there?"

"It is I, — it is Catherine! I cannot go without seeing my boy. I must see him — I must, once more!"

"My dear sister, the place is shut up, — it is impossible. God bless me, if Mrs. Morton should hear you!"

"I have walked before this window for hours; I have waited till all is hushed in your house, till no one, not even a menial, need see the mother stealing to the bed of her child. Brother! by the memory of our own mother, I command you to let me look, for the last time, upon my boy's face!"

As Catherine said this, standing in that lonely street, — darkness and solitude below, God and the stars above, — there was about her a majesty which awed the listener. Though she was so near, her features were not very clearly visible; but her attitude, — her hand raised aloft, — the outline of her wasted, but still commanding form, were more impressive from the shadowy dimness of the air.

"Come round, Catherine," said Mr. Morton, after a pause; "I will admit you."

He shut the window, stole to the door, unbarred it gently, and admitted his visitor. He bade her follow him, and, shading the light with his hand, crept up the stairs. Catherine's step made no sound.

They passed, unmolested and unheard, the room in which the wife was drowsily reading, according to her custom, before she tied her nightcap and got into bed, a chapter in some pious book. They ascended to the chamber where Sidney lay; Morton opened the door cautiously, and stood at the threshold, so holding the candle that its light might not wake the child, though it sufficed to guide Catherine to the bed. The room was small, perhaps close, but scrupulously clean; for cleanliness was Mrs. Roger Morton's capital virtue. The mother, with a tremulous hand, drew aside the white curtains, and checked her sobs as she gazed on the young, quiet face that was turned towards her. She gazed some moments in passionate silence; who shall say, beneath that silence, what thoughts, what prayers, moved and stirred? Then bending down, with pale, convulsive lips, she kissed the little hands thrown so listlessly on the coverlid of the pillow on which the head lay. After this, she turned her face to her brother, with a mute appeal in her glance, took a ring from her finger, — a ring that had never till then left it, the ring which Philip Beaufort had placed there the day after that child was born. "Let him wear this round his neck," said she, and stopped, lest she should sob aloud, and disturb the boy. In that gift, she felt as if she invoked the father's spirit to watch over the friendless orphan; and then, pressing together her own hands firmly, as we do in some paroxysm of great pain, she turned from the room, descended the stairs, gained the street, and muttered to her brother, "I am happy now; peace be on these thresholds!" Before he could answer she was gone.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

Thus things are strangely wrought,  
While joyful May doth last ;  
Take May in time, — when May is gone  
The pleasant time is past.

RICHARD EDWARDS :  
From the *Paradise of Dainty Devices*.

IT was that period of the year when, to those who look on the surface of society, London wears its most radiant smile; when shops are gayest and trade most brisk; when down the thoroughfares roll and glitter the countless streams of indolent and voluptuous life; when the upper class spend, and the middle class make; when the ball-room is the market of beauty, and the clubhouse the school for scandal; when the hells yawn for their prey, and opera-singers and fiddlers — creatures hatched from gold, as the dung-flies from the dung — swarm, and buzz, and fatten, round the hide of the gentle public. In the cant phrase, it was “the London season.” And happy, take it altogether, happy above the rest of the year, even for the hapless, is that period of ferment and fever. It is not the season for duns, and the debtor glides about with a less anxious eye; and the weather is warm, and the vagrant sleeps, unfrozen, under the starlit portico; and the beggar thrives, and the thief rejoices, — for the rankness of the civilization has superfluities clutched by all. And out of the general corruption, things sordid and things miserable crawl forth to bask in the common sunshine, — things that perish when the first autumn winds whistle along the

melancholy city. It is the gay time for the heir and the beauty, and the statesman and the lawyer, and the mother with her young daughters, and the artist with his fresh pictures, and the poet with his new book. It is the gay time, too, for the starved journey-man, and the ragged outcast that, with long stride and patient eyes, follows for pence the equestrian, who bids him go and be d—d, in vain. It is the gay time for the painted harlot in a crimson pelisse; and a gay time for the old hag that loiters about the thresholds of the gin-shop, to buy back, in a draught, the dreams of departed youth. It is gay, in fine, as the fulness of a vast city is ever gay; for vice as for innocence, for poverty as for wealth. And the wheels of every single destiny wheel on the merrier, no matter whether they are bound to heaven or to hell.

Arthur Beaufort, the young heir, was at his father's house. He was fresh from Oxford, where he had already discovered that learning is *not* better than house and land. Since the new prospects opened to him, Arthur Beaufort was greatly changed. Naturally studious and prudent, had his fortunes remained what they had been before his uncle's death, he would probably have become a laborious and distinguished man. But though his abilities were good, he had not those restless impulses which belong to genius, — often not only its glory but its curse. The golden rod cast his energies asleep at once. Good-natured to a fault, and somewhat vacillating in character, he adopted the manner and the code of the rich young idlers who were his equals at college. He became, like them, careless, extravagant, and fond of pleasure. This change, if it deteriorated his mind, improved his exterior. It was a change that could not but please women, and of all

women his mother the most. Mrs. Beaufort was a lady of high birth; and, in marrying her, Robert had hoped much from the interest of her connections; but a change in the ministry had thrown her relations out of power; and, beyond her dowry, he obtained no worldly advantage with the lady of his mercenary choice. Mrs. Beaufort was a woman whom a word or two will describe. She was thoroughly commonplace, — neither bad nor good, neither clever nor silly. She was what is called well-bred, — that is, languid, silent, perfectly dressed, and insipid. Of her two children, Arthur was almost the exclusive favorite, especially after he became the heir to such brilliant fortunes. For she was so much the mechanical creature of the world, that even her affection was warm or cold in proportion as the world shone on it. Without being absolutely in love with her husband, she liked him, — they suited each other; and (in spite of all the temptations that had beset her in their earlier years, for she had been esteemed a beauty, and lived, as worldly people must do, in circles where examples of unpunished gallantry are numerous and contagious) her conduct had ever been scrupulously correct. She had little or no feeling for misfortunes with which she had never come into contact; for those with which she had, — such as the distresses of younger sons, or the errors of fashionable women, or the disappointments of “a proper ambition,” — she had more sympathy than might have been supposed, and touched on them with all the tact of well-bred charity and lady-like forbearance. Thus, though she was regarded as a strict person in point of moral decorum, yet in society she was popular, — as women, at once pretty and inoffensive, generally are.

To do Mrs. Beaufort justice, she had not been privy

to the letter her husband wrote to Catherine, although not wholly innocent of it. The fact is, that Robert had never mentioned to her the peculiar circumstances that made Catherine an exception from ordinary rules, — the generous propositions of his brother to him the night before his death; and, whatever his incredulity as to the alleged private marriage, the perfect loyalty and faith that Catherine had borne to the deceased, he had merely observed, "I must do something, I suppose, for that woman: she very nearly entrapped my poor brother into marrying her; and he would then, for what I know, have cut Arthur out of the estates. Still, I must do something for her, — eh?"

"Yes, I think so. What was she? — very low?"

"A tradesman's daughter."

"The children should be provided for according to the rank of the mother; that's the general rule in such cases: and the mother should have about the same provision she might have looked for if she had married a tradesman and been left a widow. I daresay she was a very artful kind of person, and don't deserve anything; but it is always handsomer, in the eyes of the world, to go by the general rules people lay down as to money matters."

So spoke Mrs. Beaufort. She concluded her husband had settled the matter, and never again recurred to it. Indeed, she had never liked the late Mr. Beaufort, whom she considered *mauvais ton*.

In the breakfast-room at Mr. Beaufort's, the mother and son were seated; the former at work, the latter lounging by the window: they were not alone. In a large elbow-chair sat a middle-aged man, listening, or appearing to listen, to the prattle of a beautiful little girl, — Arthur Beaufort's sister. This man was not



handsome, but there was a certain elegance in his air, and a certain intelligence in his countenance, which made his appearance pleasing. He had that kind of eye which is often seen with red hair, — an eye of a reddish hazel, with very long lashes; the eyebrows were dark and clearly defined; and the short hair showed to advantage the contour of a small, well-shaped head. His features were irregular; the complexion had been sanguine, but was now faded, and a yellow tinge mingled with the red. His face was more wrinkled, especially round the eyes — which, when he laughed, were scarcely visible — than is usual even in men ten years older. But his teeth were still of a dazzling whiteness; nor was there any trace of decayed health in his countenance. He seemed one who had lived hard, but who had much yet left in the lamp wherewith to feed the wick. At the first glance he appeared slight as he lolled listlessly in his chair, — almost fragile. But, at a nearer examination, you perceived that, in spite of the small extremities and delicate bones, his frame was constitutionally strong. Without being broad in the shoulders, he was exceedingly deep in the chest, — deeper than men who seemed giants by his side; and his gestures had the ease of one accustomed to an active life. He had, indeed, been celebrated in his youth for his skill in athletic exercises; but a wound, received in a duel many years ago, had rendered him lame for life, — a misfortune which interfered with his former habits, and was said to have soured his temper. This personage, whose position and character will be described hereafter, was Lord Lilburne, the brother of Mrs. Beaufort.

“So, Camilla,” said Lord Lilburne to his niece, as carelessly, not fondly, he stroked down her glossy ring-

lets, "you don't like Berkeley Square as you did Gloucester Place."

"Oh, no! not half so much! You see I never walk out in the fields,<sup>1</sup> nor make daisy-chains at Primrose Hill. I don't know what mamma means," added the child, in a whisper, "in saying we are better off here."

Lord Lilburne smiled, but the smile was a half sneer.

"You will know quite soon enough, Camilla; the understandings of young ladies grow up very quickly on this side of Oxford Street. Well, Arthur, and what are your plans to-day?"

"Why," said Arthur, suppressing a yawn, "I have promised to ride out with a friend of mine, to see a horse that is for sale, somewhere in the suburbs."

As he spoke, Arthur rose, stretched himself, looked in the glass, and then glanced impatiently at the window.

"He ought to be here by this time."

"He! who?" said Lord Lilburne, "the horse or the other animal, — I mean the friend?"

"The friend," answered Arthur, smiling; but coloring while he smiled, for he half suspected the quiet sneer of his uncle.

"Who is your friend, Arthur?" asked Mrs. Beaufort, looking up from her work.

"Watson, an Oxford man. By the by, I must introduce him to you."

"Watson! what Watson; what family of Watson? Some Watsons are good and some are bad," said Mrs. Beaufort, musingly.

"Then they are very unlike the rest of mankind," observed Lord Lilburne, dryly.

"Oh! *my* Watson is a very gentlemanlike person, I

<sup>1</sup> Now the Regent's Park.

assure you," said Arthur, half laughing, "and you need not be ashamed of him." Then, rather desirous of turning the conversation, he continued, "So my father will be back from Beaufort Court to-day."

"Yes; he writes in excellent spirits. He says the rents will bear raising at least ten per cent, and that the house will not require much repair."

Here Arthur threw open the window.

"Ah, Watson! how are you? How d'ye do, Marsden? Danvers, too! that's capital! the more the merrier! I will be down in an instant. But would you not rather come in?"

"An agreeable inundation," murmured Lord Lilburne. "Three at a time: he takes your house for Trinity College."

A loud, clear voice, however, declined the invitation; the horses were heard pawing without. Arthur seized his hat and whip, and glanced to his mother and uncle, smilingly. "Good-by! I shall be out till dinner. Kiss me, my pretty 'Milly!" And as his sister, who had run to the window, sickening for the fresh air and exercise he was about to enjoy, now turned to him wistful and mournful eyes, the kind-hearted young man took her in his arms, and whispered while he kissed her, —

"Get up early to-morrow, and we'll have such a nice walk together."

Arthur was gone; his mother's gaze had followed his young and graceful figure to the door.

"Own that he is handsome, Lilburne. May I not say more, — has he not the proper air?"

"My dear sister, your son will be rich. As for his air, he has plenty of airs, but wants graces."

"Then who could polish him like yourself?"

"Probably no one. But had I a son, — which Heaven forbid! — he should not have me for his Mentor. Place a young man (go and shut the door, Camilla!) between two vices, women and gambling, if you want to polish him into the fashionable smoothness. *Entre nous*, the varnish is a little expensive!"

Mrs. Beaufort sighed. Lord Lilburne smiled. He had a strange pleasure in hurting the feelings of others. Besides, he disliked youth: in his own youth he had enjoyed so much that he grew sour when he saw the young.

Meanwhile Arthur Beaufort and his friends, careless of the warmth of the day, were laughing merrily, and talking gayly, as they made for the suburb of H——.

"It is an out-of-the-way place for a horse, too," said Sir Harry Danvers.

"But I assure you," insisted Mr. Watson, earnestly, "that my groom, who is a capital judge, says it is the cleverest hack he ever mounted. It has won several trotting matches. It belonged to a sporting tradesman, now done up. The advertisement caught me."

"Well," said Arthur, gayly, "at all events, the ride is delightful. What weather! You must all dine with me at Richmond to-morrow, — we will row back."

"And a little chicken-hazard, at the M——, afterwards," said Mr. Marsden, who was an elder, not a better man than the rest, — a handsome, saturnine man, who had just left Oxford, and was already known on the turf.

"Anything you please," said Arthur, making his horse curvet.

Oh, Mr. Robert Beaufort! Mr. Robert Beaufort! could your prudent, scheming, worldly heart but feel what devil's tricks your wealth was playing with a son

who if poor had been the pride of the Beauforts! On one side of our pieces of gold we see the saint trampling down the dragon, — false emblem! Reverse it on the coin! In the real use of the gold, it is the dragon who tramples down the saint! But on, on! the day is bright and your companions merry; make the best of your green years, Arthur Beaufort.

The young men had just entered the suburb of H——, and were spurring on four abreast at a canter. At that time an old man, feeling his way before him with a stick, — for though not quite blind, he saw imperfectly, — was crossing the road. Arthur and his friends, in loud converse, did not observe the poor passenger. He stopped abruptly, for his ear caught the sound of danger, — it was too late: Mr. Marsden's horse, hard-mouthed, and high-stepping, came full against him. Mr. Marsden looked down, —

"Hang these old men! *always* in the way," said he, plaintively, and in the tone of a much-injured person, and, with that, Mr. Marsden rode on. But the others, who were younger, — who were not gamblers, who were not yet grinded down into stone by the world's wheels, — the others halted. Arthur Beaufort leaped from his horse, and the old man was already in his arms; but he was severely hurt. The blood trickled from his forehead; he complained of pain in his side and limbs.

"Lean on me, my poor fellow! I will take you home. Do you live far off?"

"Not many yards. This would not have happened if I had had my dog. Never mind, sir, go your way. It is only an old man, — what of that? I wish I had my dog."

"I will join you," said Arthur to his friends; "my groom has the direction. I will just take the poor old

man home, and send for a surgeon. I shall not be long."

"So like you, Beaufort: the best fellow in the world!" said Mr. Watson, with some emotion. "And there's Marsden positively dismounted, and looking at his horse's knees as if they could be hurt! Here's a sovereign for you, my man."

"And here's another," said Sir Harry; "so that's settled. Well, you will join us, Beaufort? You see the yard yonder? We'll wait twenty minutes for you. Come on, Watson."

The old man had not picked up the sovereigns thrown at his feet, neither had he thanked the donors. And on his countenance there was a sour, querulous, resentful expression.

"Must a man be a beggar because he is run over, or because he is half blind?" said he, turning his dim, wandering eyes painfully towards Arthur. "Well, I wish I had my dog!"

"I will supply his place," said Arthur, soothingly. "Come, lean on me, — heavier; that's right. You are not so bad, — eh?"

"Um! — the sovereigns! — it is wicked to leave them in the kennel!"

Arthur smiled. "Here they are, sir."

The old man slid the coins into his pocket, and Arthur continued to talk, though he got but short answers, and those only in the way of direction, till at last the old man stopped at the door of a small house, near the churchyard.

After twice ringing the bell, the door was opened by a middle-aged woman, whose appearance was above that of a common menial, — dressed, somewhat gayly for her years, in a cap seated very far back on a black *toupet*,

and decorated with red ribbons, an apron made out of an Indian silk handkerchief, a puce-colored sarcenet gown, black silk stockings, long gilt earrings, and a watch at her girdle.

"Bless us, and save us, sir! What *has* happened?" exclaimed this worthy personage, holding up her hands.

"Pish! I am faint: let me in. I don't want your aid any more, sir. Thank you. Good-day!"

Not discouraged by this farewell, the churlish tone of which fell harmless on the invincibly sweet temper of Arthur, the young man continued to assist the sufferer along the narrow passage into a little old-fashioned parlor; and no sooner was the owner deposited on his worm-eaten leather-chair than he fainted away. On reaching the house, Arthur had sent his servant (who had followed him with the horses) for the nearest surgeon; and while the woman was still employed, after taking off the sufferer's cravat, in burning feathers under his nose, there was heard a sharp rap and a shrill ring. Arthur opened the door, and admitted a smart little man in nankeen breeches and gaiters. He bustled into the room.

"What's this — bad accident — um — um! Sad thing, very sad. Open the window. A glass of water, — a towel. So, so: I see, I see; no fracture, — contusion. Help him off with his coat. Another chair, ma'am; put up his poor legs. What age is he, ma'am? Sixty-eight! Too old to bleed. Thank you. How is it, sir? Poorly, to be sure: will be comfortable presently, — faintish still? Soon put all to rights."

"Tray! Tray! Where's Tray? Where's my dog, Mrs. Boxer?"

"Lord, sir, what do you want with your dog now? He is in the back-yard."

"And what business has my dog in the back-yard?" almost screamed the sufferer, in accents that denoted no diminution of vigor. "I thought as soon as my back was turned my dog would be ill-used! Why did I go without my dog? Let in my dog directly, Mrs. Boxer!"

"All right, you see, sir," said the apothecary, turning to Beaufort; "no cause for alarm. Very comforting that little passion; does him good,—sets one's mind easy. How did it happen? Ah, I understand! knocked down,—might have been worse. Your groom (sharp fellow!) explained in a trice, sir. Thought it was my old friend here by the description. Worthy man; settled here a many year; very odd,—eccentric" (this in a whisper). "Came off instantly: just at dinner,—cold lamb and salad. 'Mrs. Perkins,' says I, 'if any one calls for me, I shall be at No. 4 Prospect Place.' Your servant observed the address, sir. Oh, very sharp fellow! See how the old gentleman takes to his dog: fine little dog,—what a stump of a tail! Deal of practice, expect two accouchements every hour. Hot weather for childbirth. So says I to Mrs. Perkins, 'If Mrs. Plummer is taken, or Mrs. Everat, or if old Mr. Grub has another fit, send off at once to No. 4.' Medical men should be always in the way,—that's my maxim. Now, sir, where do you feel the pain?"

"In my ears, sir."

"Bless me, that looks bad. How long have you felt it?"

"Ever since you have been in the room."

"Oh! I take. Ha! ha!—very eccentric,—very!" muttered the apothecary, a little disconcerted. "Well, let him lie down, ma'am. I'll send him a little quieting draught to be taken directly,—pill at night, aperi-



ent in the morning. If wanted, send for me, — always to be found. Bless me, that's my boy Bob's ring! Please to open the door, ma'am. Know his ring, — very peculiar knack of his own. Lay ten to one it is Mrs. Plummer, or, perhaps, Mrs. Everat, — her ninth child in eight years; in the grocery line. A woman in a thousand, sir!"

Here a thin boy, with very short coat-sleeves, and very large hands, burst into the room with his mouth open.

"Sir, Mr. Perkins, sir!"

"I know, I know, — coming. Mrs. Plummer or Mrs. Everat?"

"No, sir; it be the poor lady at Mrs. Lacy's; she be taken desperate. Mrs. Lacy's girl has just been over to the shop, and made me run here to you, sir."

"Mrs. Lacy's! oh, I know. Poor Mrs. Morton! Bad case, very bad, — must be off. Keep him quiet, ma'am. Good-day! Look in to-morrow, — nine o'clock. Put a little lint with the lotion on the head, ma'am. Mrs. Morton! Ah! bad job that."

Here the apothecary had shuffled himself off to the street-door, when Arthur laid his hand on his arm.

"Mrs. Morton! Did you say *Morton*, sir? What kind of a person, — is she very ill?"

"Hopeless case, sir, — general break-up. Nice woman, quite the lady, — known better days, I'm sure."

"Has she any children, sons?"

"Two; both away now; fine lads, — quite wrapped up in them, youngest especially."

"Good heavens! it must be she, — ill, and dying, and destitute, perhaps," exclaimed Arthur, with real and deep feeling; "I will go with you, sir. I fancy that I know

this lady, — that ” (he added generously) “ I am *related* to her.”

“ Do you? — glad to hear it. Come along then; she ought to have some one near her besides servants, — not but what Jenny, the maid, is uncommonly kind. Dr. —, who attends her sometimes, said to me, says he, ‘ It is the mind, Mr. Perkins; I wish we could get back her boys.’ ”

“ And where are they? ”

“ ‘ Prenticed out, I fancy. Master Sidney — ”

“ Sidney! ”

“ Ah! that was his name, — pretty name. D’ ye know Sir Sidney Smith? — extraordinary man, sir! Master Sidney was a beautiful child, — quite spoiled. She always fancied him ailing, — always sending for me. ‘ Mr. Perkins,’ said she, ‘ there ’s something the matter with my child; I ’m sure there is, though he won’t own it. He has lost his appetite, — had a headache last night.’ ‘ Nothing the matter, ma’am,’ says I, ‘ wish you ’d think more of yourself.’ These mothers are silly, anxious, poor creatures. Nater, sir, nater, — wonderful thing, — nater! Here we are.”

And the apothecary knocked at the private door of a milliner and hosier’s shop.

## CHAPTER X.

Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourished. — *Titus Andronicus*.

As might be expected, the excitement and fatigue of Catherine's journey to N—— had considerably accelerated the progress of disease. And when she reached home, and looked round the cheerless rooms, all solitary, all hushed, — Sidney gone, gone from her forever, she felt, indeed, as if the last reed on which she had leaned was broken, and her business upon earth was done. Catherine was not condemned to absolute poverty, — the poverty which grinds and gnaws, the poverty of rags and famine. She had still left nearly half of such portion of the little capital, realized by the sale of her trinkets, as had escaped the clutch of the law; and her brother had forced into her hands a note for £20, with an assurance that the same sum should be paid to her half-yearly. Alas! there was little chance of her needing it again! She was not, then, in want of means to procure the common comforts of life. But now a new passion had entered into her breast, — the passion of the miser; she wished to hoard every sixpence as some little provision for her children. What was the use of her feeding a lamp nearly extinguished, and which was fated to be soon broken up and cast amidst the vast lumber-house of death! She would willingly have removed into a more homely lodging, but the servant of the house had been so fond of Sidney, — so kind to *him*. She clung to one familiar face on

which there seemed to live the reflection of her child's. But she relinquished the first floor for the second; and there, day by day, she felt her eyes grow heavier and heavier beneath the clouds of the last sleep. Besides the aid of Mr. Perkins, a kind enough man in his way, the good physician whom she had before consulted still attended her, and — refused his fee. Shocked at perceiving that she rejected every little alleviation of her condition, and wishing at least to procure for her last hours the society of one of her sons, he had inquired the address of the elder; and on the day preceding the one in which Arthur discovered her abode, he despatched to Philip the following letter: —

SIR, — Being called in to attend your mother in a lingering illness, which I fear may prove fatal, I think it my duty to request you to come to her as soon as you receive this. Your presence cannot but be a great comfort to her. The nature of her illness is such that it is impossible to calculate exactly how long she may be spared to you; but I am sure her fate might be prolonged, and her remaining days more happy, if she could be induced to remove into a better air and a more quiet neighborhood, to take more generous sustenance, and, above all, if her mind could be set more at ease as to your and your brother's prospects. You must pardon me if I have seemed inquisitive; but I have sought to draw from your mother some particulars as to her family and connections, with a wish to represent to them her state of mind. She is, however, very reserved on these points. If, however, you have relations well-to-do in the world, I think some application to them should be made. I fear the state of her affairs weighs much upon your poor mother's mind; and I must leave you to judge how far it can be relieved by the good feeling of any persons upon whom she may have legitimate claims. At all events, I repeat my wish that you should come to her forthwith.

I am, etc.,

---

After the physician had despatched this letter, a sudden and marked alteration for the worse took place in his patient's disorder; and in the visit he had paid that morning, he saw cause to fear that her hours on earth would be much fewer than he had before anticipated. He had left her, however, comparatively better; but two hours after his departure, the symptoms of her disease had become very alarming, and the good-natured servant-girl, her sole nurse, and who had, moreover, the whole business of the other lodgers to attend to, had, as we have seen, thought it necessary to summon the apothecary in the interval that must elapse before she could reach the distant part of the metropolis in which Dr. —— resided.

On entering the chamber, Arthur felt all the remorse which of right belonged to his father, press heavily on his soul. What a contrast, that mean and solitary chamber, and its comfortless appurtenances, to the graceful and luxurious abode where full of health and hope he had last beheld her, the mother of Philip Beaufort's children! He remained silent till Mr. Perkins, after a few questions, retired to send his drugs. He then approached the bed; Catherine, though very weak and suffering much pain, was still sensible. She turned her dim eyes on the young man; but she did not recognize his features.

"You do not remember me?" said he, in a voice struggling with tears; "I am Arthur — Arthur Beaufort."

Catherine made no answer.

"Good heavens! Why do I see you here? I believed you with your friends, your children provided for, as became my father to do. He assured me that you were so."

Still no answer.

And then the young man, overpowered with the feelings of a sympathizing and generous nature, forgetting for awhile Catherine's weakness, poured forth a torrent of inquiries, regrets, and self-upbraidings, which Catherine at first little heeded. But the name of her children repeated again and again, struck upon that chord which, in a woman's heart, is the last to break; and she raised herself in her bed, and looked at her visitor wistfully.

"Your father," she said, then,— "your father was unlike my Philip; but I see things differently now. For me, all bounty is too late; but my children, — tomorrow they may have no mother. The law is with you, but not justice! You will be rich and powerful; will you befriend my children?"

"Through life, so help me Heaven!" exclaimed Arthur, falling on his knees beside the bed.

What then passed between them it is needless to detail; for it was little, save broken repetitions of the same prayer and the same response. But there was so much truth and earnestness in Arthur's voice and countenance that Catherine felt as if an angel had come there to administer comfort. And when, late in the day, the physician entered, he found his patient leaning on the breast of her young visitor, and looking on his face with a happy smile. -

The physician gathered enough from the appearance of Arthur and the gossip of Mr. Perkins to conjecture that one of the rich relations he had attributed to Catherine was arrived. Alas! for her it was now indeed too late!

## CHAPTER XI.

D' ye stand amazed ? — Look o'er thy head, Maximinian !  
Look to the terror which overhangs thee.

BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER : *The Prophetess.*

PHILIP had been five weeks in his new home; in another week he was to enter on his articles of apprenticeship. With a stern, unbending gloom of manner he had commenced the duties of his novitiate. He submitted to all that was enjoined him. He seemed to have lost forever the wild and unruly waywardness that had stamped his boyhood; but he was never seen to smile, — he scarcely ever opened his lips. His very soul seemed to have quitted him with its faults; and he performed all the functions of his situation with the quiet listless regularity of a machine. Only when the work was done and the shop closed, instead of joining the family circle in the back parlor, he would stroll out in the dusk of the evening, away from the town, and not return till the hour at which the family retired to rest. Punctual in all he did, he never exceeded that hour. He had heard once a week from his mother; and only on the mornings in which he expected a letter did he seem restless and agitated. Till the postman entered the shop he was as pale as death, — his hands trembling, his lips compressed. When he read the letter he became composed; for Catherine sedulously concealed from her son the state of her health: she wrote cheerfully, besought him to content himself with the state into which he had

fallen, and expressed her joy that in his letters he intimated that content; for the poor boy's letters were not less considerate than her own. On her return from her brother she had so far silenced or concealed her misgivings as to express satisfaction at the home she had provided for Sidney; and she even held out hopes of some future, when, their probation finished and their independence secured, she might reside with her sons alternately. These hopes redoubled Philip's assiduity, and he saved every shilling of his weekly stipend; and sighed as he thought that in another week his term of apprenticeship would commence, and the stipend cease.

Mr. Plaskwith could not but be pleased on the whole with the diligence of his assistant, but he was chafed and irritated by the sullenness of his manner. As for Mrs. Plaskwith, poor woman! she positively detested the taciturn and moody boy, who never mingled in the jokes of the circle, nor played with the children, nor complimented her, nor added, in short, anything to the sociability of the house. Mr. Plimmins, who had at first sought to condescend, next sought to bully; but the gaunt frame and savage eye of Philip awed the smirk youth, in spite of himself; and he confessed to Mrs. Plaskwith that he should not like to meet "the gypsy" alone on a dark night; to which Mrs. Plaskwith replied as usual, "that Mr. Plimmins always *did* say the best things in the world!"

One morning Philip was sent a few miles into the country to assist in cataloguing some books in the library of Sir Thomas Champerdown, — that gentleman, who was a scholar, having requested that some one acquainted with the Greek character might be sent to him, and Philip being the only one in the shop who possessed such knowledge.



It was evening before he returned. Mr. and Mrs. Plaskwith were both in the shop as he entered, — in fact they had been employed in talking him over.

"I can't abide him!" cried Mrs. Plaskwith. "If you choose to take him for good I sha'n't have an easy moment. I'm sure the 'prentice that cut his master's throat at Chatham last week was just like him."

"Pshaw! Mrs. P.," said the bookseller, taking a huge pinch of snuff, as usual, from his waistcoat-pocket. "I myself was reserved when I was young: all reflective people are. I may observe, by the by, that it was the case with Napoleon Bonaparte; still, however, I must own he is a disagreeable youth, though he attends to his business."

"And how fond of his money he is!" remarked Mrs. Plaskwith; "he won't buy himself a new pair of shoes! — quite disgraceful! And did you see what a look he gave Plimmins when he joked about his indifference to his *sole*? Plimmins always does say such good things!"

"He is shabby, certainly," said the bookseller; "but the value of a book does not always depend on the binding."

"I hope he is honest!" observed Mrs. Plaskwith; and here Philip entered.

"Hum," said Mr. Plaskwith; "you have had a long day's work; but I suppose it will take a week to finish?"

"I am to go again to-morrow morning, sir: two days more will conclude the task."

"There's a letter for you," cried Mrs. Plaskwith; "you owes me for it."

"A letter!" It was not his mother's hand: it was a strange writing, he gasped for breath as he broke the seal. It was the letter of the physician.

His mother then was ill,—dying,—wanting, perhaps, the necessaries of life. She would have concealed from him her illness and her poverty. His quick alarm exaggerated the last into utter want; he uttered a cry that rang through the shop, and rushed to Mr. Plaskwith.

“Sir, sir! my mother is dying! She is poor, poor,—perhaps starving; money, money!—lend me money!—ten pounds!—five!—I will work for you all my life for nothing, but lend me the money!”

“Hoity-toity!” said Mrs. Plaskwith, nudging her husband,—“I told you what would come of it; it will be ‘money or life’ next time.”

Philip did not heed or hear this address, but stood immediately before the bookseller, his hands clasped,—wild impatience in his eyes. Mr. Plaskwith, somewhat stupefied, remained silent.

“Do you hear me?—are you human?” exclaimed Philip, his emotion revealing at once all the fire of his character. “I tell you my mother is dying! I must go to her! Shall I go empty-handed? Give me money!”

Mr. Plaskwith was not a bad-hearted man; but he was a formal man and an irritable one. The tone his shopboy (for so he considered Philip) assumed to him, before his own wife, too (examples are very dangerous), rather exasperated than moved him.

“That’s not the way to speak to your master: you forget yourself, young man!”

“Forget! But, sir, if she has not necessaries,—if she is starving?”

“Fudge!” said Mr. Plaskwith. “Mr. Morton writes me word that he has provided for your mother. Does not he, Hannah?”

“More fool he, I’m sure, with such a fine family of his own! Don’t look at me in that way, young man; I

won't take it, — that I won't. I declare my blood friz to see you! ”

“ Will you advance me money? — five pounds, — only five pounds, Mr. Plaskwith? ”

“ Not five shillings! Talk to *me* in this style! Not the man for it, sir! — highly improper. Come, shut up the shop, and recollect yourself; and, perhaps, when Sir Thomas's library is done, I may let you go to town. You can't to-morrow. All a sham, perhaps; eh, Hannah? ”

“ Very likely! Consult Plimmins. Better come away now, Mr. P. He looks like a young tiger.”

Mrs. Plaskwith quitted the shop for the parlor. Her husband, putting his hands behind his back, and throwing back his chin, was about to follow her. Philip, who had remained for the last moment mute and white as stone, turned abruptly; and his grief taking rather the tone of rage than supplication, he threw himself before his master, and, laying, his hand on his shoulder, said, —

“ I leave you, — do not let it be with a curse. I conjure you, have mercy on me! ”

Mr. Plaskwith stopped; and had Philip then taken but a milder tone, all had been well. But, accustomed from childhood to command, all his fierce passions loose within him, despising the very man he thus implored, the boy ruined his own cause. Indignant at the silence of Mr. Plaskwith, and too blinded by his emotions to see that in that silence there was relenting, he suddenly shook the little man with a vehemence that almost overset him, and cried, —

“ You, who demand for five years my bones and blood, my body and soul, a slave to your vile trade, — do you deny me bread for a mother's lips? ”

Trembling with anger, and, perhaps, fear, Mr. Plaskwith extricated himself from the gripe of Philip, and, hurrying from the shop, said, as he banged the door: —

“Beg my pardon for this to-night, or out you go to-morrow, neck and crop! Zounds! a pretty pass the world’s come to! I don’t believe a word about your mother. Baugh!”

Left alone, Philip remained for some moments struggling with his wrath and agony. He then seized his hat, which he had thrown off on entering, pressed it over his brows, turned to quit the shop, when his eye fell upon the till. Plaskwith had left it open, and the gleam of the coin struck his gaze,—that deadly smile of the arch tempter. Intellect, reason, conscience,—all, in that instant, were confusion and chaos. He cast a hurried glance round the solitary and darkening room, plunged his hand into the drawer, clutched he knew not what, — silver or gold, as it came uppermost,—and burst into a loud and bitter laugh. That laugh itself startled him; it did not sound like his own. His face fell, and his knees knocked together; his hair bristled; he felt as if the very fiend had uttered that yell of joy over a fallen soul.

“No, no, no!” he muttered; “no, my mother, — not even for thee!” And, dashing the money to the ground, he fled like a maniac from the house.

At a later hour that same evening Mr. Robert Beaufort returned from his country mansion to Berkeley Square. He found his wife very uneasy and nervous about the non-appearance of their only son. Arthur had sent home his groom and horses about seven o’clock, with a hurried scroll, written in pencil on a blank page torn from his pocketbook, and containing only these words: —

"Don't wait dinner for me, — I may not be home for some hours. I have met with a melancholy adventure. You will approve what I have done when we meet."

This note a little perplexed Mr. Beaufort; but, as he was very hungry, he turned a deaf ear both to his wife's conjectures and his own surmises, till he had refreshed himself; and then he sent for the groom, and learned that, after the accident to the blind man, Mr. Arthur had been left at a hosier's in H——. This seemed to him extremely mysterious; and, as hour after hour passed away, and still Arthur came not, he began to imbibe his wife's fears, which were now wound up almost to hysterics; and just at midnight he ordered his carriage, and taking with him the groom as a guide, set off to the suburban region. Mrs. Beaufort had wished to accompany him; but the husband observing that young men would be young men, and that there *might* possibly be a lady in the case, Mrs. Beaufort, after a pause of thought, passively agreed that, all things considered, she had better remain at home. No lady of proper decorum likes to run the risk of finding herself in a false position. Mr. Beaufort accordingly set out alone. Easy was the carriage, swift were the steeds, and luxuriously the wealthy man was whirled along. Not a suspicion of the true cause of Arthur's detention crossed him; but he thought of the snares of London, — of artful females in distress. "A melancholy adventure" generally implies love for the adventure, and money for the melancholy; and Arthur was young, generous, with a heart and a pocket equally open to imposition. Such scrapes, however, do not terrify a father when he is a man of the world, so much as they do an anxious mother; and, with more curiosity than alarm, Mr. Beaufort, after a short doze, found himself before the shop indicated.

Notwithstanding the lateness of the hour, the door to the private entrance was ajar, — a circumstance which seemed very suspicious to Mr. Beaufort. He pushed it open with caution and timidity; a candle placed upon a chair in the narrow passage threw a sickly light over the flight of stairs, till swallowed up by the deep shadow from the sharp angle made by the ascent. Robert Beaufort stood a moment in some doubt whether to call, to knock, to recede, or to advance, when a step was heard upon the stairs above; it came nearer and nearer, — a figure emerged from the shadow of the last landing-place, and Mr. Beaufort, to his great joy, recognized his son.

Arthur did not, however, seem to perceive his father, and was about to pass him, when Mr. Beaufort laid his hand on his arm.

“What means all this, Arthur? What place are you in? How you have alarmed us!”

Arthur cast a look upon his father of sadness and reproach.

“Father,” he said, in a tone that sounded stern, almost commanding, — “I will show you where I have been: follow me, — nay, I say, follow.”

He turned without another word, re-ascended the stairs; and Mr. Beaufort, surprised and awed into mechanical obedience, did as his son desired. At the landing-place of the second floor, another long-wicked, neglected, ghastly candle emitted its cheerless ray. It gleamed through the open door of a small bedroom to the left, through which Beaufort perceived the forms of two women. One (it was the kindly maid-servant) was seated on a chair, and weeping bitterly; the other (it was a hireling nurse, in the first and last day of her attendance) was unpinning her dingy shawl before she lay down to take a nap. She turned her vacant, listless

face upon the two men, put on a doleful smile, and decently closed the door.

"Where are we, I say, Arthur?" repeated Mr. Beaufort. Arthur took his father's hand, drew him into a room to the right, and taking up the candle, placed it on a small table beside a bed, and said, "Here, sir, in the presence of death!"

Mr. Beaufort cast a hurried and fearful glance on the still, wan, serene face beneath his eyes, and recognized in that glance the features of the neglected and the once-adored Catherine.

"Yes; she, whom your brother so loved, the mother of his children, died in this squalid room, and far from her sons, in poverty, in sorrow!—died of a broken heart! Was that well, father? Have you in this nothing to repent?"

Conscience-stricken and appalled, the worldly man sank down on a seat beside the bed, and covered his face with his hands.

"Ay," continued Arthur, almost bitterly, — "ay, we, his nearest of kin, we, who have inherited his lands and gold, — we have been thus heedless of that great legacy your brother bequeathed to us, the things dearest to him, the woman he loved, the children his death cast, nameless and branded, on the world. Ay, weep, father; and while you weep, think of the future, of reparation. I have sworn to that clay to befriend her sons; join you, who have all the power to fulfil the promise, — join in that vow: and may Heaven not visit on us both the woes of this bed of death!"

"I did not know — I — I —" faltered Mr. Beaufort.

"But we should have known," interrupted Arthur, mournfully. "Ah, my dear father! do not harden your heart by false excuses. The dead still speaks to you,

and commends to your care her children. My task here is done: oh, sir! yours is to come. I leave you alone with the dead."

So saying, the young man, whom the tragedy of the scene had worked into a passion and a dignity above his usual character, unwilling to trust himself farther to his emotions, turned abruptly from the room, fled rapidly down the stairs, and left the house. As the carriage and liveries of his father met his eye, he groaned; for their evidences of comfort and wealth seemed a mockery to the deceased. He averted his face and walked on; nor did he heed nor even perceive a form that at that instant rushed by him — pale, haggard, breathless — towards the house which he had quitted, and the door of which he left open, as he had found it, — open, as the physician had left it when hurrying, ten minutes before the arrival of Mr. Beaufort, from the spot where his skill was impotent. Wrapped in gloomy thought, alone, and on foot, at that dreary hour, and in that remote suburb, — the heir of the Beauforts sought his splendid home. Anxious, fearful, hoping, the outcast orphan flew on to the death-room of his mother.

Mr. Beaufort, who had but imperfectly heard Arthur's parting accents, lost and bewildered by the strangeness of his situation, did not at first perceive that he was left alone. Surprised, and chilled by the sudden silence of the chamber, he rose, withdrew his hands from his face, and again he saw that countenance so mute and solemn. He cast his gaze round the dismal room for Arthur; he called his name, — no answer came. A superstitious tremor seized upon him; his limbs shook; he sank once more on his seat, and closed his eyes, — muttering, for the first time, perhaps, since his childhood, words of penitence and prayer. He was roused from this bitter self-



abstraction by a deep groan. It seemed to come from the bed. Did his ears deceive him; had the dead found a voice? He started up in an agony of dread, and saw opposite to him the livid countenance of Philip Morton; the son of the corpse had replaced the son of the living man! The dim and solitary light fell upon that countenance. There, all the bloom and freshness natural to youth seemed blasted! There, on those wasted features, played all the terrible power and glare of precocious passions,—rage, woe, scorn, despair. Terrible is it to see upon the face of a boy the storm and whirlwind that should visit only the strong heart of a man!

"She is dead!—dead! and in your presence!" shouted Philip, with his wild eyes fixed upon the cowering uncle; "dead with care, perhaps with famine. And *you* have come to look upon your work!"

"Indeed," said Beaufort, deprecatingly, "I have but just arrived; I did not know she had been ill, or in want, upon my honor. This is all a—a—mistake; I—I—came in search of—of—another—"

"You did *not*, then, come to relieve her?" said Philip, very calmly. "You had not learned her suffering and distress, and flown hither in the hope that there was yet time to save her? You did not do this? Ha! ha!—why did I think it?"

"Did any one call, gentlemen?" said a whining voice at the door; and the nurse put in her head.

"Yes, yes; you may come in," said Beaufort, shaking with nameless and cowardly apprehension; but Philip had flown to the door, and, gazing on the nurse, said,—

"She is a stranger!—see, a *stranger*! The son now has assumed his post. Begone, woman!" and he pushed her away, and drew the bolt across the door.

And then there looked upon him, as there had looked

upon his reluctant companion, calm and holy, the face of the peaceful corpse. He burst into tears, and fell on his knees so close to Beaufort that he touched him; he took up the heavy hand, and covered it with burning kisses.

"Mother! mother! do not leave me! wake, smile once more on your son! I would have brought you money, but I could not have asked for your blessing, *then*; mother, I ask it now!"

"If I had but known, if you had but written to me, my dear young gentleman; but my offers had been refused, and —"

"Offers of a hireling's pittance to her; to her for whom my father would have coined his heart's blood into gold! My father's wife! — his wife! — offers —"

He rose suddenly, folded his arms, and, facing Beaufort with a fierce, determined brow, said, —

"Mark me, you hold the wealth that I was trained from my cradle to consider my heritage. I have worked with these hands for bread, and never complained, except to my own heart and soul. I never hated, and never cursed you, robber as you were, — yes, robber! For, even were there no marriage, save in the sight of God, neither my father, nor nature, nor Heaven, meant that you should seize all, and that there should be nothing due to the claims of affection and blood. He was not the less my father, even if the Church spoke not on my side. Despoiler of the orphan, and derider of human love, you are not the less a robber, though the law fences you round, and men call you honest! But I did not hate you for this. Now, in the presence of my dead mother, — dead, far from both her sons, — now I abhor and curse you. You may think yourself safe when you quit this room, — safe, and from my hatred; you may be so: but

do not deceive yourself,— the curse of the widow and the orphan shall pursue, it shall cling to you and yours; it shall gnaw your heart in the midst of splendor; it shall cleave to the heritage of your son! There shall be a deathbed yet, beside which you shall see the spectre of her, now so calm, rising for retribution from the grave! These words,— no, you shall never forget them; years hence they shall ring in your ears, and freeze the marrow of your bones! And now begone, my father's brother,— begone from my mother's corpse to your luxurious home."

He opened the door, and pointed to the stairs. Beaufort, without a word, turned from the room and departed. He heard the door closed and locked as he descended the stairs; but he did not hear the deep groans and vehement sobs in which the desolate orphan gave vent to the anguish which succeeded to the less sacred paroxysm of revenge and wrath.



## BOOK II.

Abend ward's und wurde Morgen ;  
Nimmer, nimmer stand ich still.

SCHILLER, *Der Pilgrim*.



## BOOK II.

---

### CHAPTER I.

*Incubo.* — Look to the cavalier. What ails he ?

*Hostess.* — And in such good clothes, too !

BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER: *Love's Pilgrimage*

*Theod.* — I have a brother, — there my last hope !

Thus as you find me, without fear or wisdom.

I now am only child of Hope and Danger.

*Ibid.*

THE time employed by Mr. Beaufort in reaching his home was haunted by gloomy and confused terrors. He felt inexplicably as if the denunciations of Philip were to visit less himself than his son. He trembled at the thought of Arthur meeting this strange, wild, exasperated scatterling, — perhaps on the morrow, — in the very height of his passions. And yet, after the scene between Arthur and himself, he saw cause to fear that he might not be able to exercise a sufficient authority over his son, however naturally facile and obedient, to prevent his return to the house of death. In this dilemma he resolved, as is usual with cleverer men, even when yoked to yet feebler helpmates, to hear if his wife had anything comforting or sensible to say upon the subject. Accordingly, on reaching Berkeley Square, he went straight to Mrs. Beaufort; and, having relieved her mind as to Arthur's safety, related

the scene in which he had been so unwilling an actor. With that more lively susceptibility which belongs to most women, however comparatively unfeeling, Mrs. Beaufort made greater allowance than her husband for the excitement Philip had betrayed. Still Beaufort's description of the dark menaces, the fierce countenance, the brigand-like form of the bereaved son, gave her very considerable apprehensions for Arthur, should the young men meet; and she willingly coincided with her husband in the propriety of using all means of parental persuasion or command to guard against such an encounter. But, in the meanwhile, Arthur returned not, and new fears seized the anxious parents. He had gone forth alone, in a remote suburb of the metropolis, at a late hour, himself under strong excitement. He might have returned to the house, or have lost his way amidst some dark haunts of violence and crime; they knew not where to send, or what to suggest. Day already began to dawn, and still he came not. At length, towards five o'clock, a loud rap was heard at the door, and Mr. Beaufort, hearing some bustle in the hall, descended. He saw his son borne into the hall from a hackney-coach by two strangers, pale, bleeding, and apparently insensible. His first thought was, that he had been murdered by Philip. He uttered a feeble cry, and sank down beside his son.

"Don't be darnted, sir," said one of the strangers, who seemed an artisan; "I don't think he be much hurt. You sees he was crossing the street, and the coach ran against him; but it did not go over his head; it be only the stones that makes him bleed so: and that's a mercy."

"A providence, sir," said the other man; "but Providence watches over us all, night and day, sleep or



wake. Hem! We were passing at the time from the meeting, — the Odd Fellows, sir, — and so we took him, and got him a coach; for we found his card in his pocket. He could not speak just then; but the rattling of the coach did him a deal of good, for he groaned, — my eyes! how he groaned! — did not he, Burrows?"

"It did one's heart good to hear him."

"Run for Astley Cooper; you, — go to Brodie. Good heavens! he is dying. Be quick — quick!" cried Mr. Beaufort to his servants, while Mrs. Beaufort, who had now gained the spot, with greater presence of mind had Arthur conveyed into a room.

"It is a judgment upon me," groaned Beaufort, rooted to the stone of his hall, and left alone with the strangers.

"No, sir; it is not a *judgment*, it is a *providence*," said the more sanctimonious and better dressed of the two men; "for, put the question, if it had been a judgment, the wheel would have gone over him; but it didn't: and, whether he dies or not, I shall always say, that if that's not a providence, I don't know what is. We have come a long way, sir; and Burrows is a poor man, though I'm well-to-do."

This hint for money restored Beaufort to his recollection; he put his purse into the nearest hand outstretched to clutch it, and muttered forth something like thanks.

"Sir, may the Lord bless you! and I hope the young gentleman will do well. I am sure you have cause to be thankful that he was within an inch of the wheel; was not he, Burrows? Well, it's enough to convert a heathen. But the ways of Providence are mysterious, and that's the truth of it. Good-night, sir."

Certainly it did seem as if the curse of Philip was already at its work. An accident almost similar to that

which, in the adventure of the blind man, had led Arthur to the clew of Catherine, within twenty-four hours stretched Arthur himself upon his bed. The sorrow Mr. Beaufort had not relieved, was now at his own hearth. But *there*, were parents and nurses, and great physicians and skilful surgeons, and all the army that combine against death, — and *there*, were ease and luxury and kind eyes and pitying looks, and all that can take the sting from pain. And thus, the very night on which Catherine had died, broken down and worn-out, upon a strange breast, with a feeless doctor, and by the ray of a single candle, the heir to the fortunes once destined to her son, wrestled also with the grim Tyrant, who seemed, however, scared from his prey by the arts and luxuries which the world of rich men raises up in defiance of the grave.

Arthur was, indeed, very seriously injured; one of his ribs was broken, and he had received two severe contusions on the head. To insensibility succeeded fever, followed by delirium. He was in imminent danger for several days. If anything could console his parents for such an affliction, it was the thought that, at least, he was saved from the chance of meeting Philip. Mr. Beaufort, in the instinct of that capricious and fluctuating conscience which belongs to weak minds, which remains still, and drooping, and lifeless, as a flag on a mast-head during the calm of prosperity, but flutters, and flaps, and tosses when the wind blows and the wave heaves, thought very acutely and remorsefully of the condition of the Mortons, during the danger of his own son. So far, indeed, from his anxiety for Arthur monopolizing all his care, it only sharpened his charity towards the orphans; for many a man becomes devout and good when he fancies he has an *immediate* interest in appeasing

Providence. The morning after Arthur's accident, he sent for Mr. Blackwell. He commissioned him to see that Catherine's funeral rites were performed with all due care and attention; he bade him obtain an interview with Philip, and assure the youth of Mr. Beaufort's good and friendly disposition towards him, and to offer to forward his views in any course of education he might prefer, or any profession he might adopt; and he earnestly counselled the lawyer to employ all his tact and delicacy in conferring with one of so proud and fiery a temper. Mr. Blackwell, however, had no tact or delicacy to employ; he went to the house of mourning, forced his way to Philip, and the very exordium of his harangue, which was devoted to praises of the extraordinary generosity and benevolence of his employer, mingled with condescending admonitions towards gratitude from Philip, so exasperated the boy, that Mr. Blackwell was extremely glad to get out of the house with a whole skin. He, however, did not neglect the more formal part of his mission, but communicated immediately with a fashionable undertaker, and gave orders for a very genteel funeral. He thought that after the funeral Philip would be in a less excited state of mind, and more likely to hear reason. He, therefore, deferred a second interview with the orphan till after that event; and, in the meanwhile, despatched a letter to Mr. Beaufort, stating that he had attended to his instructions; that the orders for the funeral were given; but that at present Mr. Philip Morton's mind was a little disordered, and that he could not calmly discuss the plans for the future suggested by Mr. Beaufort. He did not doubt, however, that in another interview all would be arranged according to the wishes his client had so nobly conveyed to him. Mr. Beaufort's conscience on this point was therefore set at rest.

It was a dull, close, oppressive morning upon which the remains of Catherine Morton were consigned to the grave. With the preparations for the funeral Philip did not interfere; he did not inquire by whose orders all that solemnity of mutes and coaches and black plumes and crape-bands was appointed. If his vague and undeveloped conjecture ascribed this last and vain attention to Robert Beaufort, it neither lessened the sullen resentment he felt against his uncle, nor, on the other hand, did he conceive that he had a right to forbid respect to the dead, though he might reject service for the survivor. Since Mr. Blackwell's visit, he had remained in a sort of apathy or torpor which seemed to the people of the house to partake rather of indifference than woe.

The funeral was over, and Philip had returned to the apartments occupied by the deceased; and now, for the first time, he set himself to examine what papers, etc., she had left behind. In an old escritoire, he found, first, various packets of letters in his father's handwriting, the characters in many of them faded by time. He opened a few; they were the earliest love-letters. He did not dare to read above a few lines,—so much did their living tenderness, and breathing, frank, hearty passion, contrast with the fate of the adored one. In those letters, the very heart of the writer seemed to beat! Now both hearts alike were stilled. And GHOST called vainly unto GHOST!

He came, at length, to a letter in his mother's hand, addressed to himself, and dated two days before her death. He went to the window, and gasped in the mists of the sultry air for breath. Below were heard the noises of London,—the shrill cries of itinerant venders, the rolling carts, the whoop of boys returned

for a while from school; amidst all these rose one loud, merry peal of laughter, which drew his attention mechanically to the spot whence it came; it was at the threshold of a public-house, before which stood the hearse that had conveyed his mother's coffin, and the gay undertakers halting there to refresh themselves. He closed the window with a groan, retired to the farthest corner of the room, and read as follows:—

MY DEAREST PHILIP, — When you read this, I shall be no more. You and poor Sidney will have neither father nor mother, nor fortune, nor name. Heaven is more just than man, and in Heaven is my hope for you. You, Philip, are already past childhood; your nature is one formed, I think, to wrestle successfully with the world. Guard against your own passions, and you may bid defiance to the obstacles that will beset your path in life. And lately, in our reverses, Philip, you have so subdued those passions, so schooled the pride and impetuosity of your childhood, that I have contemplated your prospects with less fear than I used to do, even when they seemed so brilliant. Forgive me, my dear child, if I have concealed from you my state of health, and if my death be a sudden and unlooked-for shock. Do not grieve for me too long. For myself, my release is indeed escape from the prison-house and the chain, — from bodily pain and mental torture, which may, I fondly hope, prove some expiation for the errors of a happier time. For I did err, when, even from the least selfish motives, I suffered my union with your father to remain concealed, and thus ruined the hopes of those who had rights upon me equal even to *his*. But, O Philip! beware of the first false steps into deceit; beware, too, of the passions, which do not betray their fruit till years and years after the leaves that look so green and the blossoms that seem so fair.

I repeat my solemn injunction: do not grieve for me; but strengthen your mind and heart to receive the charge that I now confide to you, — my Sidney, my child, your brother! He is so soft, so gentle; he has been so dependent for very life

U O N

upon me, and we are parted now for the first and last time. He is with strangers; and — and — O Philip, Philip! watch over him for the love you bear, not only to him, but to me! Be to him a father as well as a brother. Put your stout heart against the world, so that you may screen him, the weak child, from its malice. He has not your talents nor strength of character; without you he is nothing. Live, toil, rise for his sake not less than your own. If you knew how this heart beats as I write to you, if you could conceive what comfort I take for *him* from my confidence in you, you would feel a new spirit, — my spirit, my mother-spirit of love and forethought and vigilance, enter into you while you read. See him when I am gone, — comfort and soothe him. Happily he is too young yet to know all his loss; and do not let him think unkindly of me in the days to come, for he is a child now, and they may poison his mind against me more easily than they can yours. Think, if he is unhappy hereafter, he may forget how I loved him, he may curse those who gave him birth. Forgive me all this, Philip, my son, and heed it well.

And now, where you find this letter, you will see a key; it opens a well in the bureau in which I have hoarded my little savings. You will see that I have not died in poverty. Take what there is; young as you are, you may want it more now than hereafter. But hold it in trust for your brother as well as yourself. If he is harshly treated (and you will go and see him, and you will remember that *he* would writhe under what *you* might scarcely feel), or if they overtask him (he is so young to work yet), it may find him a home near you. God watch over and guard you both! You are orphans now. But *He* has told even the orphans to call him "Father!"

When he had read this letter, Philip Morton fell upon his knees and prayed.

## CHAPTER II.

His curse! Dost comprehend what that word means,  
Shot from a father's angry breath?

JAMES SHIRLEY: *The Brothers.*

This term is fatal, and affrights me. — *Ibid.*

Those fond philosophers that magnify  
Our human nature . . . . .  
Conversed but little with the world — they knew not  
*The fierce vexation of community!*

*Ibid.*

AFTER he had recovered his self-possession, Philip opened the well of the bureau, and was astonished and affected to find that Catherine had saved more than £100. Alas! how much must she have pinched herself to have hoarded this little treasure! After burning his father's love-letters, and some other papers which he deemed useless, he made up a little bundle of those trifling effects belonging to the deceased, which he valued as memorials and relics of her, quitted the apartment, and descended to the parlor behind the shop. On the way he met with the kind servant, and, recalling the grief that she had manifested for his mother since he had been in the house, he placed two sovereigns in her hand. "And now," said he, as the servant wept while he spoke, — "*now* I can bear to ask you what I have not before done. How did my poor mother die? Did she suffer much? — or — or —"

"She went off like a lamb, sir," said the girl, drying her eyes. "You see the gentleman had been with her

all the day, and she was much more easy and comfortable in her mind after he came."

"The gentleman! Not the gentleman I found here?"

"Oh, dear no! Not the pale, middle-aged gentleman nurse and I saw go down, as the clock struck two. But the young, soft-spoken gentleman who came in the morning, and said as how he was a relation. He stayed with her till she slept; and when she woke, she smiled in his face. I shall never forget that smile, — for I was standing on the other side, as it might be here, and the doctor was by the window, pouring out the doctor's stuff in the glass; and so she looked on the young gentleman, and then looked round at us all, and shook her head very gently, but did not speak. And the gentleman asked her how she felt, and she took both his hands and kissed them; and then he put his arms round and raised her up, to take the physic like, and she said then, 'You will never forget *them*?' and he said, 'Never.' I don't know what that meant, sir!"

"Well, well, — go on."

"And her head fell back on his buzzom, and she looked so happy; and when the doctor came to the bedside, she was quite gone."

"And the stranger had my post! No matter; God bless him, — God bless him. Who was he; what was his name?"

"I don't know, sir; he did not say. He stayed after the doctor went, and cried very bitterly; he took on more than you did, sir."

"Ay."

"And the other gentleman came just as he was agoing, and they did not seem to like each other; for I heard him through the wall, as nurse and I were in the next room, speak as if he was scolding; but he did not stay long."



"And has never been seen since?"

"No, sir! Perhaps missus can tell you more about him. But won't you take something, sir? Do, — you look so pale."

Philip, without speaking, pushed her gently aside, and went slowly down the stairs. He entered the parlor, where two or three children were seated, playing at dominos; he despatched one for their mother, the mistress of the shop, who came in, and dropped him a courtesy, with a very grave, sad face, as was proper.

"I am going to leave your house, ma'am; and I wish to settle any little arrears of rent, etc."

"Oh, sir! don't mention it," said the landlady; and as she spoke, she took a piece of paper from her bosom, very neatly folded, and laid it on the table. "And here, sir," she added, taking from the same depository a card, — "here is the card left by the gentleman who saw to the funeral. He called half an hour ago, and bade me say, with his compliments, that he would wait on you to-morrow at eleven o'clock. So I hope you won't go yet: for I think he means to settle everything for you; he said as much, sir."

Philip glanced over the card, and read, "Mr. George Blackwell, Lincoln's Inn." His brow grew dark, — he let the card fall on the ground, put his foot on it with a quiet scorn, and muttered to himself, "The lawyer shall not bribe me out of my curse!" He turned to the total of the bill, — not heavy, for poor Catherine had regularly defrayed the expense of her scanty maintenance and humble lodging, — paid the money, and, as the landlady wrote the receipt, he asked, "Who was the gentleman — the younger gentleman — who called in the morning of the day my mother died?"

"Oh, sir! I am so sorry I did not get his name."

Mr. Perkins said that he was some relation. Very odd he has never been since. But he 'll be sure to call again, sir; you had much better stay here."

"No: it does not signify. All that he could do is done. But stay, give him this note, if he should call."

Philip, taking the pen from the landlady's hand, hastily wrote (while Mrs. Lacy went to bring him sealing-wax and a light) these words:—

I cannot guess who you are: they say that you call yourself a relation; that must be some mistake. I knew not that my poor mother had relations so kind. But, whoever you be, you soothed her last hours,—she died in your arms; and if ever—years, long years hence—we should chance to meet, and I can do anything to aid another, my blood and my life and my heart and my soul, all are slaves to your will. If you be really of her kindred, I commend to you my brother: he is at —, with Mr. Morton. If you can serve him, my mother's soul will watch over you as a guardian angel. As for me, I ask no help from any one; I go into the world, and will carve out my own way. So much do I shrink from the thought of charity from others, that I do not believe I could bless you, as I do now, if your kindness to me did not close with the stone upon my mother's grave.

PHILIP.

He sealed this letter, and gave it to the woman.

"Oh, by the by," said she, "I had forgot; the doctor said that if you would send for him, he would be most happy to call on you, and give you any advice."

"Very well."

"And what shall I say to Mr. Blackwell?"

"That he may tell his employer to remember our last interview."

With that, Philip took up his bundle and strode from the house. He went first to the churchyard, where his mother's remains had been that day interred. It was

near at hand, a quiet, almost a rural spot. The gate stood ajar, for there was a public path through the churchyard, and Philip entered with a noiseless tread. It was then near evening; the sun had broken out from the mists of the earlier day, and the westerling rays shone bright and holy upon the solemn place.

"Mother! mother!" sobbed the orphan, as he fell prostrate before that fresh green mound: "here — here I have come to repeat my oath, to swear again that I will be faithful to the charge you have intrusted to your wretched son! And at this hour I dare ask if there be on this earth one more miserable and forlorn?"

As words to this effect struggled from his lips, a loud, shrill voice, — the cracked, painful voice of weak age wrestling with strong passion, rose close at hand.

"Away, reprobate! thou art accursed!"

Philip started, and shuddered as if the words were addressed to himself, and from the grave. But, as he rose on his knee, and, tossing the wild hair from his eyes, looked confusedly round, he saw, at a short distance, and in the shadow of the wall, two forms: the one, an old man with gray hair, who was seated on a crumbling, wooden tomb, facing the setting sun; the other, a man apparently yet in the vigor of life, who appeared bent as in humble supplication. The old man's hands were outstretched over the head of the younger, as if suiting terrible action to the terrible words, and, after a moment's pause, — a moment, but it seemed far longer to Philip, — there was heard a deep, wild, ghastly howl from a dog that cowered at the old man's feet, — a howl, perhaps, of fear at the passion of his master, which the animal might associate with danger.

"Father! father!" said the suppliant, reproachfully, "your very dog rebukes your curse?"

"Be dumb! My dog! What hast thou left me on earth but him? Thou hast made me loathe the sight of friends, for thou hast made me loathe mine own name. Thou hast covered it with disgrace; thou hast turned mine old age into a by-word, — thy crimes leave me solitary in the midst of my shame!"

"It is many years since we met, father; we may never meet again, — shall we part thus?"

"*Thus*, aha!" said the old man, in a tone of withering sarcasm: "I comprehend, — you are come for money!"

At this taunt the son started as if stung by a serpent, raised his head to its full height, folded his arms, and replied, —

"Sir, you wrong me: for more than twenty years I have maintained myself, — no matter how, but without taxing you, — and now I felt remorse for having suffered you to discard me, — now, when you are old and helpless, and, I heard, blind, and you might want aid, even from your poor, good-for-nothing son. But I have done. Forget — not my sins, but this interview. Repeal your curse, father: I have enough on my head without yours; and so let the son at least bless the father who curses him. Farewell!"

The speaker turned as he thus said, with a voice that trembled at the close, and brushed rapidly by Philip, whom he did not, however, appear to perceive; but Philip, by the last red beam of the sun, saw again that marked, storm-beaten face which it was difficult, once seen, to forget, and recognized the stranger on whose breast he had slept the night of his fatal visit to R——.

The old man's imperfect vision did not detect the departure of his son, but his face changed and softened as the latter strode silently through the rank grass.

"William!" he said at last, gently, — "William!" and the tears rolled down his furrowed cheeks; "my son!" but that son was gone: the old man listened for reply, — none came. "He has left me, — poor William! — we shall never meet again;" and he sank once more on the old tombstone, dumb, rigid, motionless, — an image of Time himself in his own domain of graves. The dog crept closer to his master, and licked his hand. Philip stood for a moment in thoughtful silence; his exclamation of despair had been answered as by his better angel. There *was* a being more miserable than himself; and the accursed would have envied the bereaved!

The twilight had closed in; the earliest star — the star of memory and love, the Hesperus hymned by every poet since the world began — was fair in the arch of heaven, as Philip quitted the spot, with a spirit more reconciled to the future, more softened, chastened, attuned to gentle and pious thoughts, than perhaps ever yet had made his soul dominant over the deep and dark tide of his gloomy passions. He went thence to a neighboring sculptor, and paid beforehand for a plain tablet to be placed above the grave he had left. He had just quitted that shop, in the same street, not many doors removed from the house in which his mother had breathed her last. He was pausing by a crossing, irresolute whether to repair at once to the home assigned to Sidney, or to seek some shelter in town for that night, when three men who were on the opposite side of the way suddenly caught sight of him.

"There he is, — there he is; stop, sir! — stop!"

Philip heard these words, looked up, and recognized the voice and the person of Mr. Plaskwith; the bookseller was accompanied by Mr. Plimmins and a sturdy, ill-favored stranger.

A nameless feeling of fear, rage, and disgust seized the unhappy boy, and at the same moment a ragged vagabond whispered to him, "Stump it, my cove; that's a Bow Street runner."

Then there shot through Philip's mind the recollection of the money he had seized, though but to dash away: was he now — he, still, to his own conviction, the heir of an ancient and spotless name — to be hunted as a thief; or, at the best, what right over his person and his liberty had he given to his task-master? Ignorant of the law, the law only seemed to him, as it ever does to the ignorant and the friendless, — a foe. Quicker than lightning these thoughts, which it takes so many words to describe, flashed through the storm and darkness of his breast; and at the very instant that Mr. Plimmins had laid hands on his shoulder his resolution was formed. The instinct of self beat loud at his heart. With a bound, — a spring that sent Mr. Plimmins sprawling in the kennel, he darted across the road and fled down an opposite lane.

"Stop him! stop!" cried the bookseller, and the officer rushed after him with almost equal speed. Lane after lane, alley after alley, fled Philip, dodging, winding, breathless, panting; and lane after lane, alley after alley, thickened at his heels the crowd that pursued. The idle and the curious and the officious — ragged boys, ragged men, from stall and from cellar, from corner and from crossing, joined in that delicious chase which runs down young Error till it sinks, too often, at the door of the jail or the foot of the gallows. But Philip slackened his pace; he began to distance his pursuers. He was now in a street which they had not yet entered, — a quiet street, with few, if any shops. Before the threshold of a better kind of public-house, or

rather tavern, to judge by its appearance, lounged two men; and while Philip flew on, the cry of "Stop him!" had changed, as the shout passed to new voices, into "Stop *the thief!*" — that cry yet howled in the distance. One of the loungers seized him; Philip, desperate and ferocious, struck at him with all his force: but the blow was scarcely felt by that Herculean frame.

"Pish," said the man, scornfully, "I am no spy; if you run from justice I would help you to a sign-post."

Struck by the voice, Philip looked hard at the speaker. It was the voice of the accursed son.

"Save me! you remember me?" said the orphan, faintly.

"Ah! I think I do; poor lad! Follow me, this way!"

The stranger turned within the tavern, passed the hall through a sort of corridor that led into a back-yard which opened upon a nest of courts or passages.

"You are safe for the present; I will take you where you can tell me all at your ease, — see!" As he spoke they emerged into an open street, and the guide pointed to a row of hackney-coaches. "Be quick, — get in. Coachman, drive fast to —" Philip did not hear the rest of the direction.

Our story returns to Sidney.

## CHAPTER III.

Nous vous mettrons à couvert,  
Répondit le pot de fer :  
Si quelque matière dure  
Vous menace d'aventure,  
Entre deux je passerai,  
Et du coup vous sauverai.

Le pot de terre en souffre !<sup>1</sup>

LA FONTAINE.

"SIDNEY, come here, sir! What *have* you been at? You have torn your frill into tatters! How did you do this? Come, sir, no lies."

"Indeed, ma'am, it was not my fault. I just put my head out of the window to see the coach go by, and a nail caught me here."

"Why, you little plague! you have scratched yourself, — you are always in mischief. What business had you to look after the coach?"

"I don't know," said Sidney, hanging his head ruefully.

"La, mother!" cried the youngest of the cousins, a square-built, ruddy, coarse-featured urchin, about Sidney's age, — "la, mother, he never see a coach in the street when we are at play but he runs arter it."

"*After*, not *arter*," said Mr. Roger Morton, taking the pipe from his mouth.

<sup>1</sup> We, replied the Iron Pot, will shield you: should any hard substance menace you with danger, I'll intervene, and save you from the shock. . . . The Earthen Pot was the sufferer!



"Why do you go after the coaches, Sidney?" said Mrs. Morton; "it is very naughty: you will be run over some day."

"Yes, ma'am," said Sidney, who during the whole colloquy had been trembling from head to foot.

"'Yes, ma'am,' and 'no, ma'am; ' you have no more manners than a cobbler's boy."

"Don't tease the child, my dear; he is crying," said Mr. Morton, more authoritatively than usual. "Come here, my man!" and the worthy uncle took him in his lap and held his glass of brandy-and-water to his lips; Sidney, too frightened to refuse, sipped hurriedly, keeping his large eyes fixed on his aunt, as children do when they fear a cuff.

"You spoil the boy more than you do your own flesh and blood," said Mrs. Morton, greatly displeased.

Here Tom, the youngest-born before described, put his mouth to his mother's ear, and whispered loud enough to be heard by all, "He runs after the coach 'cause he thinks his ma may be in it. Who's homesick, I should like to know? Ba! Baa!"

The boy pointed his finger over his mother's shoulder, and the other children burst into a loud giggle.

"Leave the room, all of you, — leave the room," said Mr. Morton, rising angrily and stamping his foot.

The children, who were in great awe of their father, huddled and hustled each other to the door; but Tom, who went last, bold in his mother's favor, popped his head through the doorway, and cried, "Good-by, little homesick!"

A sudden slap in the face from his father changed his chuckle into a very different kind of music, and a loud, indignant sob was heard without for some moments after the door was closed.

"If that's the way you behave to your children, Mr. Morton, I vow you sha'n't have any more, if I can help it. Don't come near me, — don't touch me!" and Mrs. Morton assumed the resentful air of offended beauty.

"Pshaw!" growled the spouse, and he reseated himself and resumed his pipe. There was a dead silence. Sidney crouched near his uncle, looking very pale. Mrs. Morton, who was knitting, knitted away with the excited energy of nervous irritation.

"Ring the bell, Sidney," said Mr. Morton. The boy obeyed, — the parlor-maid entered. "Take Master Sidney to his room; keep the boys away from him, and give him a large slice of bread and jam, Martha."

"Jam, indeed! — treacle," said Mrs. Morton.

"Jam, Martha!" repeated the uncle, authoritatively.

"Treacle!" reiterated the aunt.

"Jam, I say!"

"Treacle, you hear: and for that matter, Martha has no jam to give!"

The husband had nothing more to say.

"Good-night, Sidney; there's a good boy, go and kiss your aunt and make your bow; and I say, my lad, don't mind those plagues. I'll talk to them to-morrow, that I will; no one shall be unkind to you in my house."

Sidney muttered something, and went timidly up to Mrs. Morton. His look, so gentle and subdued; his eyes full of tears; his pretty mouth, which, though silent, pleaded so eloquently; his willingness to forgive, and his wish to be forgiven, — might have melted many a heart harder, perhaps, than Mrs. Morton's. But there reigned what are worse than hardness, — prejudice and wounded vanity, maternal vanity. His contrast to

her own rough, coarse children, grated on her, and set the teeth of her mind on edge.

"There, child, don't tread on my gown; you are so awkward. Say your prayers, and don't throw off the counterpane! I don't like slovenly boys."

Sidney put his finger in his mouth, drooped, and vanished.

"Now, Mrs. M.," said Mr. Morton, abruptly, and knocking out the ashes of his pipe, — "now, Mrs. M., one word for all; I have told you that I promised poor Catherine to be a father to that child, and it goes to my heart to see him so snubbed. Why you dislike him I can't guess for the life of me. I never saw a sweeter-tempered child."

"Go on, sir, — go on: make your personal reflections on your own lawful wife. They don't hurt me, — oh, no, not at all! Sweet-tempered, indeed; I suppose your own children are not sweet-tempered?"

"That's neither here nor there," said Mr. Morton: "my own children are such as God made them, and I am very well satisfied."

"Indeed you *may* be proud of such a family; and to think of the pains I have taken with them, and how I have saved you in nurses, and the bad times I have had; and now, to find their noses put out of joint by that little mischief-making interloper. It is too bad of you, Mr. Morton; you will break my heart, — *that* you will!"

Mrs. Morton put her handkerchief to her eyes and sobbed.

The husband was moved; he got up and attempted to take her hand. "Indeed, Margaret, I did not mean to vex you."

"And I who have been such a fa-fai-faithful wi-wi-wife, and brought you such a deal of mon-mon-money,

and always stud-stud-studied your interests; many 's the time when you have been fast asleep, that I have sat up half the night men-men-mending the house linen; and you have not been the same man, Roger, since that boy came!"

"Well, well!" said the good man, quite overcome, and fairly taking her round the waist and kissing her; "no words between us; it makes life quite unpleasant. If it pains you to have Sidney here, I will put him to some school in the town, where they'll be kind to him. Only, if you would, Margaret, for my sake, — old girl! come, now! there 's a darling! — just be more tender with him. You see he frets so after his mother. Think how little Tom would fret if he was away from you! Poor little Tom!"

"La! Mr. Morton, you are such a man! — there 's no resisting your ways! You know how to come over me, — don't you?"

And Mrs. Morton smiled benignly, as she escaped from his conjugal arms and smoothed her cap.

Peace thus restored, Mr. Morton refilled his pipe, and the good lady, after a pause, resumed, in a very mild, conciliatory tone, —

"I'll tell you what it is, Roger, that vexes me with that there child. He is so deceitful, and he does tell such fibs!"

"Fibs! that is a very bad fault," said Mr. Morton, gravely. "*That* must be corrected."

"It was but the other day that I saw him break a pane of glass in the shop; and when I taxed him with it, he denied it, — and with such a face! I can't abide story-telling."

"Let me know the next story he tells; I'll cure him," said Mr. Morton, sternly. "You know how I broke

Tom of it. Spare the rod, and spoil the child. And when I promised to be kind to the boy, of course I did not mean that I was not to take care of his morals, and see that he grew up an honest man. Tell truth, and shame the devil, — that's my motto."

"Spoke like yourself, Roger!" said Mrs. Morton, with great animation. "But you see he has not had the advantage of such a father as you. I wonder your sister don't write to you. Some people make a great fuss about their feelings; but out of sight, out of mind."

"I hope she is not ill. Poor Catherine! she looked in a very bad way when she was here," said Mr. Morton; and he turned uneasily to the fireplace and sighed.

Here the servant entered with the supper-tray, and the conversation fell upon other topics.

Mrs. Roger Morton's charge against Sidney was, alas! too true. He had acquired, under that roof, a terrible habit of telling stories. He had never incurred that vice with his mother, because then and there he had nothing to fear; *now*, he had everything to fear, — the grim aunt, even the quiet, kind, cold, austere uncle, the apprentices, the strange servants, and, oh! more than all, those hard-eyed, loud-laughing tormentors, the boys of his own age! Naturally timid, severity made him actually a coward; and, when the nerves tremble, a lie sounds as surely as, when I vibrate that wire, the bell at the end of it will ring. Beware of the man who has been roughly treated as a child.

The day after the conference just narrated, Mr. Morton, who was subject to erysipelas, had taken a little cooling medicine. He breakfasted, therefore, later than usual, — after the rest of the family; and at this meal — *pour lui soulager* — he ordered the luxury of a muffin. Now it so chanced, that he had only finished

half the muffin, and drunk one cup of tea, when he was called into the shop by a customer of great importance, — a prosy old lady, who always gave her orders with remarkable precision, and who valued herself on a character for affability, which she maintained by never buying a penny ribbon without asking the shopman how all his family were, and talking news about every other family in the place. At the time Mr. Morton left the parlor, Sidney and Master Tom were therein, seated on two stools, and casting up division sums on their respective slates, — a point of education to which Mr. Morton attended with great care. As soon as his father's back was turned, Master Tom's eyes wandered from the slate to the muffin, as it leered at him from the slop-basin. Never did Pythian sibyl, seated above the bubbling spring, utter more oracular eloquence to her priest, than did that muffin — at least the parts of it yet extant — utter to the fascinated senses of Master Tom. First he sighed; then he moved round on his stool; then he got up; then he peered at the muffin from a respectful distance; then he gradually approached, and walked round, and round, and round it, — his eyes getting bigger and bigger; then he peeped through the glass-door into the shop, and saw his father busily engaged with the old lady; then he began to calculate and philosophize, — perhaps his father had done breakfast; perhaps he would not come back at all; if he came back, he would not miss one corner of the muffin; and if he did miss it, why should Tom be supposed to have taken it? As he thus communed with himself, he drew nearer into the fatal vortex, and at last, with a desperate plunge, he seized the triangular temptation: —

“And ere a man had power to say ‘Behold!’  
The jaws of *Thomas* had devoured it up.”

Sidney, disturbed from his studies by the agitation of his companion, witnessed this proceeding with great and conscientious alarm. "Oh, Tom!" said he, "what will your papa say?"

"Look at that!" said Tom, putting his fist under Sidney's reluctant nose. "If father misses it, you'll say the cat took it. If you don't,—my eye! what a wapping I'll give you!"

Here Mr. Morton's voice was heard, wishing the lady "Good-morning!" and Master Tom, thinking it better to leave the credit of the invention solely to Sidney, whispered, "Say I'm gone upstairs for my pocket-hanker," and hastily absconded.

Mr. Morton, already in a very bad humor, partly at the effects of the cooling medicine, partly at the suspension of his breakfast, stalked into the parlor. His tea—the second cup already poured out—was cold. He turned towards the muffin, and missed the lost piece at a glance.

"Who has been at my muffin?" said he, in a voice that seemed to Sidney like the voice he had always supposed an ogre to possess. "Have you, Master Sidney?"

"N-n-no, sir; indeed, sir!"

"Then Tom has. Where is he?"

"Gone upstairs for his handkerchief, sir."

"Did he take my muffin? Speak the truth!"

"No, sir; it was the—it was the—the cat, sir!"

"Oh, you wicked, wicked boy!" cried Mrs. Morton, who had followed her husband into the shop; "the cat kittened last night, and is locked up in the coal-cellar!"

"Come here, Master Sidney! No!—first go down, Margaret, and see if the cat is in the cellar; it might

have got out, Mrs. M.," said Mr. Morton, just, even in his wrath.

Mrs. Morton went, and there was a dead silence, except indeed in Sidney's heart, which beat louder than a clock ticks. Mr. Morton, meanwhile, went to a little cupboard; while still there, Mrs. Morton returned. The cat *was* in the cellar, the key turned on her, — in no mood to eat muffins, poor thing! — she would not even lap her milk! — like her mistress, she had had a very bad time!

"Now come here, sir!" said Mr. Morton, withdrawing himself from the cupboard, with a small horse-whip in his hand, "I will teach you how to speak the truth in future! Confess that you have told a lie!"

"Yes, sir, it was a lie! Pray — pray forgive me; but Tom made me!"

"What! when poor Tom is upstairs? — worse and worse!" said Mrs. Morton, lifting up her hands and eyes. "What a viper!"

"For shame, boy, — for shame! Take that — and that — and that —"

Writhing, shrinking, still more terrified than hurt, the poor child cowered beneath the lash.

"Mamma! — mamma!" he cried at last, "oh, why — why did you leave me?"

At these words Mr. Morton stayed his hand, the whip fell to the ground.

"Yet it is all for the boy's good," he muttered. "There, child, I hope this is the last time. There, you are not much hurt. Zounds, don't cry so!"

"He will alarm the whole street," said Mrs. Morton; "I never see such a child! Here, take this parcel to Mrs. Birnie's; you know the house, — only next street,



and dry your eyes before you get there. Don't go through the shop; this way out."

She pushed the child, still sobbing with a vehemence that she could not comprehend, through the private passage into the street, and returned to her husband.

"You are convinced now, Mr. M.?"

"Pshaw! ma'am; don't talk. But, to be sure, that's how I cured Tom of fibbing. The tea's as cold as a stone!"

## CHAPTER IV.

Le bien nous le faisons : le mal c'est la Fortune.

On a toujours raison, le Destin toujours tort.<sup>1</sup>

LA FONTAINE.

UPON the early morning of the day commemorated by the historical events of our last chapter, two men were deposited by a branch coach at the inn of a hamlet about ten miles distant from the town in which Mr. Roger Morton resided. Though the hamlet was small, the inn was large, for it was placed close by a huge finger-post that pointed to three great roads: one led to the town before-mentioned; another, to the heart of a manufacturing district; and a third to a populous seaport. The weather was fine, and the two travellers ordered breakfast to be taken into an arbor in the garden, as well as the basins and towels necessary for ablution. The elder of the travellers appeared to be unequivocally foreign; you would have guessed him at once for a German. He wore, what was then very uncommon in this country, a loose, brown linen blouse, buttoned to the chin, with a leathern belt, into which were stuck a German meerschaum and a tobacco-pouch. He had very long flaxen hair, false or real, that streamed half-way down his back, large light mustaches, and a rough, sunburnt complexion which made the fairness of the hair more remarkable. He wore an enormous pair of green spectacles, and complained

<sup>1</sup> The good we effect ourselves; the evil is the handiwork of fortune. Mortals are always in the right, destiny always in the wrong.

much, in broken English, of the weakness of his eyes. All about him, even to the smallest minutiae, indicated the German: not only the large, muscular frame, the broad feet, and vast, though well-shaped hands, but the brooch — evidently purchased of a Jew in some great fair — stuck ostentatiously and superfluously into his stock; the quaint, droll-looking carpet-bag, which he refused to trust to the boots; and the great, massive, dingy ring which he wore on his forefinger. The other was a slender, remarkably upright and sinewy youth, in a blue frock, over which was thrown a large cloak, a travelling cap, with a shade that concealed all of the upper part of his face, except a dark, quick eye of uncommon fire, and a shawl handkerchief, which was equally useful in concealing the lower part of the countenance. On descending from the coach, the German, with some difficulty, made the hostler understand that he wanted a post-chaise in a quarter of an hour; and then, without entering the house, he and his friend strolled to the arbor. While the maid-servant was covering the table with bread, butter, tea, eggs, and a huge round of beef, the German was busy in washing his hands, and talking in his national tongue to the young man, who returned no answer. But as soon as the servant had completed her operations, the foreigner turned round, and observing her eyes fixed on his brooch with much female admiration, he made one stride to her.

“Der Teufel, my goot Mädchen, but you are von var — pretty — vat you call it?” and he gave her, as he spoke, so hearty a smack that the girl was more flustered than flattered by the courtesy.

“Keep yourself to yourself, sir!” said she, very tartly, — for chambermaids never like to be kissed by a middle-aged gentleman when a younger one is by; whereupon

the German replied by a pinch,—it is immaterial to state the exact spot to which that delicate caress was directed. But this last offence was so inexpiable that the “*mädchen*” bounced off with a face of scarlet, and a “Sir, you are no gentleman, — that’s what you ar’n’t!” The German thrust his head out of the arbor, and followed her with a loud laugh; then, drawing himself in again, he said, in quite another accent, and in excellent English, “There, Master Philip, we have got rid of the girl for the rest of the morning, and that’s exactly what I wanted to do,—women’s wits are confoundedly sharp. Well, did I not tell you right, we have baffled all the bloodhounds!”

“And here then, Gawtreys, we are to part,” said Philip, mournfully.

“I wish you would think better of it, my boy,” returned Mr. Gawtreys, breaking an egg; “how can you shift for yourself,—no kith nor kin, not even that important machine for giving advice called a friend,—no, not a friend when I am gone? I foresee how it must end. (D— it, salt butter, by Jove!)”

“If I were alone in the world, as I have told you again and again, perhaps I might pin my fate to yours. But my brother!”

“There it is, always wrong when we act from our feelings. My whole life, which some day or other I will tell you, proves that. Your brother,—bah! is he not very well off with his own uncle and aunt?—plenty to eat and drink, I daresay. Come, man, you must be as hungry as a hawk,—a slice of the beef? Let well alone and shift for yourself. What good can you do your brother?”

“I don’t know, but I must see him; I have sworn it.”

"Well, go and see him, and then strike across the country to me. I will wait a day for you,—there now!"

"But tell me, first," said Philip, very earnestly, and fixing his dark eyes on his companion,— "tell me—yes, I must speak frankly—tell me, you who would link my fortune with your own, tell me what and who are you?"

Gawtrey looked up.

"What do you suppose?" said he, dryly.

"I fear to suppose anything, lest I wrong you; but the strange place to which you took me the evening on which you saved me from pursuit, the persons I met there—"

"Well-dressed, and very civil to you?"

"True! but with a certain wild looseness in their talk that— But *I* have no right to judge others by mere appearance; nor is it this that has made me anxious, and, if you will, suspicious."

"What, then?"

"Your dress,— your disguise."

"Disguised *yourself*! — ha! — ha! Behold the world's charity! You fly from some danger, some pursuit, disguised,—you, who hold yourself guiltless; I do the same, and you hold me criminal,—a robber, perhaps, a murderer it may be! I will tell you what I am: I am a son of fortune, an adventurer; I live by my wits,—so do poets and lawyers, and all the charlatans of the world; I am a charlatan,— a chameleon. 'Each man in his time plays many parts;' I play any part in which money, the arch-manager, promises me a livelihood. Are you satisfied?"

"Perhaps," answered the boy, sadly, "when I know more of the world I shall understand you better.

Strange — strange, that you, out of all men, should have been kind to me in distress!”

“Not at all strange. Ask the beggar whom he gets the most pence from,—the fine lady in her carriage, the beau smelling of Eau de Cologne? Pish! the people nearest to being beggars themselves keep the beggar alive. You were friendless, and the man who has all earth for a foe befriends you. It is the way of the world, sir,—the way of the world. Come, eat while you can. This time next year you may have no beef to your bread.”

Thus masticating and moralizing at the same time, Mr. Gawtrety at last finished a breakfast that would have astonished the whole Corporation of London; and then taking out a large old watch with an enamelled back,—doubtless more German than its master,—he said as he lifted up his carpet-bag, “I must be off,—*tempus fugit*, and I must arrive just in time to nick the vessels. Shall get to Ostend or Rotterdam safe and snug; thence to Paris. How my pretty Fan will have grown! Ah, you don’t know Fan,—make you a nice little wife one of those days. Cheer up, man, we shall meet again. Be sure of it; and hark ye, that strange place, as you call it, where I took you,—you can find it again?”

“Not I.”

“Here, then, is the address. Whenever you want me, go there, ask to see Mr. Gregg: old fellow with one eye, you recollect; shake him by the hand just so,—you catch the trick: practise it again. No, the forefinger thus; that’s right. Say ‘blater,’ no more, ‘blater;’ stay, I will write it down for you; and then ask for William Gawtrety’s direction. He will give it you at once, without questions,—these signs are under-

stood; and if you want money for your passage, he will give you that also, with advice into the bargain. Always a warm welcome with me. And so take care of yourself, and good-by. I see my chaise is at the door."

As he spoke, Gawtreys shook the young man's hand with cordial vigor, and strode off to his chaise, muttering, "Money well laid out,—fee-money; I shall have him, and, Gad, I like him,—poor devil!"

## CHAPTER V.

He is a cunning coachman that can turn well in a narrow room.

*Old Play: from LAMB'S Specimens*

Here are two pilgrims,

And neither knows one footstep of the way.

*HEYWOOD'S Duchess of Suffolk; Ibid.*

THE chaise had scarce driven from the inn-door, when a coach stopped to change horses on its last stage to the town to which Philip was bound. The name of the destination, in gilt letters on the coach-door, caught his eye as he walked from the arbor towards the road, and in a few moments he was seated as the fourth passenger in the "Nelson Slow and Sure." From under the shade of his cap he darted that quick, quiet glance which a man who hunts, or is hunted — in other words, who observes, or shuns — soon acquires. At his left hand sat a young woman in a cloak lined with yellow; she had taken off her bonnet and pinned it to the roof of the coach, and looked fresh and pretty in a silk handkerchief, which she had tied round her head, probably to serve as a nightcap during the drowsy length of the journey. Opposite to her was a middle-aged man of pale complexion, and a grave, pensive, studious expression of face; and *vis-à-vis* to Philip sat an overdressed, showy, very good-looking man of about two or three and forty. This gentleman wore auburn whiskers, which met at the chin; a foraging cap, with a gold tassel; a velvet waistcoat, across which, in various folds, hung a golden chain, at the end of



which dangled an eyeglass, that from time to time he screwed, as it were, into his right eye; he wore also a blue silk stock, with a frill much crumpled, dirty kid-gloves, and over his lap lay a cloak lined with red silk. As Philip glanced towards this personage, the latter fixed his glass also at him, with a scrutinizing stare, which drew fire from Philip's dark eyes. The man dropped his glass, and said in a half-provincial, half *haw-haw* tone, like the stage-exquisite of a minor theatre, "Pawdon me, and split legs!" therewith stretching himself between Philip's limbs in the approved fashion of inside passengers. A young man in a white greatcoat now came to the door with a glass of warm sherry-and-water.

"You must take this, — you *must*, now; it will keep the cold out," — the day was broiling, — said he to the young woman.

"Gracious me!" was the answer, "but I never drink wine of a morning, James; it will get into my head."

"To oblige *me*!" said the young man, sentimentally; whereupon the young lady took the glass, and looking very kindly at her Ganymede, said, "Your health!" and sipped, and made a wry face; then she looked at the passengers, tittered, and said, "I can't bear wine!" and so, very slowly and daintily, sipped up the rest. A silent and expressive squeeze of the hand, on returning the glass, rewarded the young man, and proved the salutary effect of his prescription.

"All right!" cried the coachman: the hostler twitched the cloths from the leaders, and away went the "Nelson Slow and Sure," with as much pretension as if it had meant to do the ten miles in an hour. The pale gentleman took from his waistcoat-pocket a little box containing gum-arabic, and having inserted a couple of morsels between his lips, he next drew forth a little thin vol-

ume, which, from the manner the lines were printed, was evidently devoted to poetry.

The smart gentleman, who, since the episode of the sherry-and-water, had kept his glass fixed upon the young lady, now said, with a genteel smirk, "That young gentleman seems very attentive, miss!"

"He is a very good young man, sir, and takes great care of me."

"Not your brother, miss, — eh?"

"La, sir! — why not?"

"No faumily likeness, — noice-looking fellow enough! But your oiyes and mouth, — ah, miss!"

Miss turned away her head, and uttered with pert vivacity, —

"I never likes compliments, sir! But the young man is not my brother."

"A sweetheart, — eh? Oh, fie, miss! Haw! haw!" and the auburn-whiskered Adonis poked Philip in the knee with one hand, and the pale gentleman in the ribs with the other. The latter locked up, and reproachfully; the former drew in his legs, and uttered an angry ejaculation.

"Well, sir, there is no harm in a sweetheart, is there?"

"None in the least, ma'am; I advise you to double the dose. We often hear of two strings to a *bow*. Daun't you think it would be noicer to have two *beaux* to your string?"

As he thus wittily expressed himself, the gentleman took off his cap, and thrust his fingers through a very curling and comely head of hair; the young lady looked at him with evident coquetry, and said, "How you *do* run on, you gentlemen!"

"I may well run on, miss, as long as I run aufter you," was the gallant reply.

Here the pale gentleman, evidently annoyed by being talked across, shut his book up and looked round. His eye rested on Philip, who, whether from the heat of the day or from the forgetfulness of thought, had pushed his cap from his brows; and the gentleman, after staring at him for a few moments with great earnestness, sighed so heavily that it attracted the notice of all the passengers.

"Are you unwell, sir?" asked the young lady, compassionately.

"A little pain in my side, nothing more!"

"Change places with me, sir," cried the Lothario, officiously. "Now do!" The pale gentleman, after a short hesitation and a bashful excuse, accepted the proposal. In a few moments the young lady and the beau were in deep and whispered conversation, their heads turned towards the window. The pale gentleman continued to gaze at Philip, till the latter, perceiving the notice he excited, colored and replaced his cap over his face.

"Are you going to N——?" asked the gentleman, in a gentle, timid voice.

"Yes!"

"Is it the first time you have ever been there?"

"Sir!" returned Philip, in a voice that spoke surprise and distaste at his neighbor's curiosity.

"Forgive me," said the gentleman, shrinking back; "but you remind me of — of — a family I once knew in the town. Do you know — the — the Morton's?"

One in Philip's situation, with, as he supposed, the officers of justice in his track (for Gawtrey, for reasons of his own, rather encouraged than allayed his fears), might well be suspicious. He replied, therefore, shortly, "I am quite a stranger to the town," and

ensconced himself in the corner, as if to take a nap. Alas! that answer was one of the many obstacles he was doomed to build up between himself and a fairer fate.

The gentleman sighed again, and never spoke more to the end of the journey. When the coach halted at the inn, — the same inn which had before given its shelter to poor Catherine, — the young man in the white coat opened the door, and offered his arm to the young lady.

"Do you make any stay here, sir?" said she to the beau, as she unpinned her bonnet from the roof.

"Perhaps so: I am waiting for my phe-aton, which my faellow is to bring down, — tauking a little tour."

"We shall be very happy to see you, sir," said the young lady, on whom the phe-aton completed the effect produced by the gentleman's previous gallantries; and with that she dropped into his hand a very neat card, on which was printed, "Wavers and Snow, Stay-makers, High Street."

The beau put the card gracefully into his pocket, leaped from the coach, nudged aside his rival of the white coat, and offered his arm to the lady, who leaned on it affectionately as she descended.

"This gentleman has been so perlite to me, James," said she. James touched his hat; the beau clapped him on the shoulder: "Ah! you are not a hauppy man, are you? Oh, no, not at all a hauppy man! Good-day to you! Guard, that hat-box is mine!"

While Philip was paying the coachman, the beau passed, and whispered him, —

"Recollect old Gregg: anything on the lay here, — don't spoil my sport if we meet!" and bustled off into the inn, whistling "God save the king!"

Philip started, then tried to bring to mind the faces which he had seen at the "strange place," and thought

he recalled the features of his fellow-traveller. However, he did not seek to renew the acquaintance, but inquired the way to Mr. Morton's house, and thither he now proceeded.

He was directed, as a short cut, down one of those narrow passages, at the entrance of which posts are placed, as an indication that they are appropriated solely to foot-passengers. A dead white wall, which screened the garden of the physician of the place ran on one side; a high fence to a nursery-ground was on the other; the passage was lonely, for it was now the hour when few persons walk, either for business or pleasure, in a provincial town, and no sound was heard save the fall of his own step on the broad flagstones. At the end of the passage in the main street to which it led, he saw already the large, smart, showy shop, with the hot sun shining full on the gilt letters that conveyed to the eyes of the customer the respectable name of "Morton," — when suddenly the silence was broken by choked and painful sobs. He turned, and beneath a compo portico, jutting from the wall which adorned the physician's door, he saw a child seated on the stone steps weeping bitterly, — a thrill shot through Philip's heart! Did he recognize, disguised as it was by pain and sorrow, that voice? He paused, and laid his hand on the child's shoulder: "Oh, don't, don't: pray don't, — I am going, I am indeed!" cried the child, quailing, and still keeping his hands clasped before his face.

"Sidney!" said Philip. The boy started to his feet, uttered a cry of rapturous joy, and fell upon his brother's breast.

"Oh, Philip! dear, dear Philip! you are come to take me away back to my own — own mamma; I will be

so good; I will never tease her again, — never, never! I have been so wretched!"

"Sit down, and tell me what they have done to you," said Philip, checking the rising heart that heaved at his mother's name.

So, there they sat, on the cold stone under the stranger's porch, these two orphans: Philip's arm round his brother's waist, Sidney leaning on his shoulder, and imparting to him — perhaps with pardonable exaggeration — all the sufferings he had gone through; and when he came to that morning's chastisement, and showed the wale across the little hands which he had vainly held up in supplication, Philip's passion shook him from limb to limb. His impulse was to march straight into Mr. Morton's shop and gripe him by the throat; and the indignation he betrayed encouraged Sidney to color yet more highly the tale of his wrongs and pain.

When he had done, and clinging tightly to his brother's broad chest, said, —

"But never mind, Philip; now we will go home to mamma."

Philip replied, —

"Listen to me, my dear brother. We cannot go back to our mother. I will tell you why, later. We are alone in the world, — we two! If you will come with me, God help you! — for you will have many hardships: we shall have to work and drudge, and you may be cold and hungry, and tired, very often, Sidney, — very, very often! But you know that, long ago, when I was so passionate, I never was wilfully unkind to you; and I declare now, that I would bite out my tongue rather than it should say a harsh word to you. That is all I can promise. Think well. Will you never miss all the comforts you have now?"

"Comforts!" repeated Sidney, ruefully, and looking at the wale over his hands. "Oh! let—let—let me go with you: I shall die if I stay here. I shall, indeed,—indeed!"

"Hush!" said Philip; for at that moment a step was heard, and the pale gentleman walked slowly down the passage, and started, and turned his head wistfully as he looked at the boys.

When he was gone, Philip rose.

"It is settled, then," said he, firmly. "Come with me at once. You shall return to their roof no more. Come, quick: we shall have many miles to go to-night."

## CHAPTER VI.

He comes —

Yet careless what he brings; his one concern

Is to conduct it to the destined inn;

And having dropped the expected bag, pass on —

To him indifferent whether grief or joy.

COWPER: *Description of the Postman.*

THE pale gentleman entered Mr. Morton's shop, and looking round him, spied the worthy trader showing shawls to a young lady just married. He seated himself on a stool, and said to the bowing foreman, —

"I will wait till Mr. Morton is disengaged."

The young lady having closely examined seven shawls, and declared they were beautiful, said, "she would think of it," and walked away. Mr. Morton now approached the stranger.

"Mr. Morton," said the pale gentleman; "you are very little altered. You do not recollect me?"

"Bless me, Mr. Spencer! is it really you? Well, what a time since we met! I am very glad to see you. And what brings you to N——? Business?"

"Yes, business. Let us go within."

Mr. Morton led the way to the parlor, where Master Tom, reperched on the stool, was rapidly digesting the plundered muffin. Mr. Morton dismissed him to play, and the pale gentleman took a chair.

"Mr. Morton," said he, glancing over his dress, "you see I am in mourning. It is for your sister. I never got the better of that early attachment, — never."



"My sister! Good heavens!" said Mr. Morton, turning very pale; "is she dead? Poor Catherine! — and I not know of it! When did she die?"

"Not many days since; and — and —" said Mr. Spencer, greatly affected, "I fear in want. I had been abroad for some months; on my return last week, looking over the newspapers (for I always order them to be filed), I read the short account of her lawsuit against Mr. Beaufort, some time back. I resolved to find her out. I did so through the solicitor she employed: it was too late; I arrived at her lodgings two days after her — her burial. I then determined to visit poor Catherine's brother, and learn if anything could be done for the children she had left behind."

"She left but two. Philip, the elder, is very comfortably placed at R——; the younger has his home with me; and Mrs. Morton is a moth — that is to say, she takes great pains with him. Ehem! And my poor, poor sister!"

"Is he like his mother?"

"Very much, when she was young, — poor, dear Catherine!"

"What age is he?"

"About ten, perhaps; I don't know exactly; much younger than the other. And so she's dead!"

"Mr. Morton, I am an old bachelor," — here a sickly smile crossed Mr. Spencer's face; "a small portion of my fortune is settled, it is true, on my relations; but the rest is mine, and I live within my income. The elder of these boys is probably old enough to begin to take care of himself. But the younger, — perhaps you have a family of your own, and can spare *him*?"

Mr. Morton hesitated, and twitched up his trousers.

"Why," said he, "this is very kind in you. I don't

know, — we 'll see. The boy is out, now; come and dine with us at two, — pot-luck. Well, so she is no more! Heigho! Meanwhile, I 'll talk it over with Mrs. M."

"I will be with you," said Mr. Spencer, rising.

"Ah!" sighed Mr. Morton, "if Catherine had but married you, she would have been a happy woman."

"I would have tried to make her so," said Mr. Spencer, as he turned away his face, and took his departure.

Two o'clock came; but no Sidney. They had sent to the place whither he had been despatched; he had never arrived there. Mr. Morton grew alarmed; and, when Mr. Spencer came to dinner, his host was gone in search of the truant. He did not return till three. Doomed that day to be belated both at breakfast and dinner, this decided him to part with Sidney whenever he should be found. Mrs. Morton was persuaded that the child only sulked, and would come back fast enough when he was hungry. Mr. Spencer tried to believe her, and ate his mutton, which was burned to a cinder; but, when five, six, seven o'clock came, and the boy was still missing, even Mrs. Morton agreed that it was high time to institute a regular search. The whole family set off different ways. It was ten o'clock before they were re-united; and then, all the news picked up was, that a boy, answering Sidney's description, had been seen with a young man in three several parts of the town; the last time at the outskirts, on the highroad towards the manufacturing districts. These tidings so far relieved Mr. Morton's mind that he dismissed the chilling fear that had crept there, — that Sidney might have drowned himself. Boys *will* drown themselves sometimes! The description of the young man coincided so remarkably with the fellow-passenger of Mr.

Spencer, that he did not doubt it was the same; the more so, when he recollected having seen him with a fair-haired child under the portico; and, yet more, when he recalled the likeness to Catherine that had struck him in the coach, and caused the inquiry that had aroused Philip's suspicion. The mystery was thus made clear, — Sidney had fled with his brother. Nothing more, however, could be done that night. The next morning, active measures should be devised; and when the morning came, the mail brought to Mr. Morton the two following letters. The first was from Arthur Beaufort.

SIR, — I have been prevented by severe illness from writing to you before. I can now scarcely hold a pen; but the instant my health is recovered I shall be with you at N——.

On her deathbed, the mother of the boy under your charge, Sidney Morton, committed him solemnly to me. I make his fortunes my care, and shall hasten to claim him at your kindly hands. But the elder son, — this poor Philip, who has suffered so unjustly, for our lawyer has seen Mr. Plaskwith and heard the whole story, — what has become of *him*? All our inquiries have failed to track him. Alas! I was too ill to institute them myself while it was yet time. Perhaps he may have sought shelter with you, his uncle: if so, assure him that he is in no danger from the pursuit of the law, — that his innocence is fully recognized; and that my father and myself implore him to accept our affection. I can write no more now; but in a few days I shall hope to see you.

I am, sir, etc.

ARTHUR BEAUFORT.

Berkeley Square.

The second letter was from Mr. Plaskwith, and ran thus: —

DEAR MORTON, — Something very awkward has happened, — not my fault, and very unpleasant for me. Your relation,

Philip, as I wrote you word, was a painstaking lad, though odd and bad mannered, — for want, perhaps, poor boy! of being taught better; and Mrs. P. is, you know, a very genteel woman, — women go too much by manners, — so she never took much to him. However, to the point, as the French emperor used to say: one evening he asked me for money for his mother, who, he said, was ill, in a very insolent way, — I may say threatening. It was in my own shop, and before Plimmins and Mrs. P.; I was forced to answer with dignified rebuke, and left the shop. When I returned he was gone, and some shillings, — fourteen, I think, and three sovereigns, — evidently from the till, scattered on the floor. Mrs. P. and Mr. Plimmins were very much frightened; thought it was clear I was robbed, and that we were to be murdered. Plimmins slept below that night, and we borrowed butcher Johnson's dog. Nothing happened. I did not think I was robbed; because the money, when we came to calculate, was all right. I know human nature; he had thought to take it, but repented, — quite clear. However, I was naturally very angry, thought he'd come back again, meant to reprove him properly, waited several days, heard nothing of him, grew uneasy, would not attend longer to Mrs. P.; for, as Napoleon Bonaparte observed, "women are well in *their* way, not in *ours*." Made Plimmins go with me to town, hired a Bow Street runner to track him out, cost me £1, 1s. and two glasses of brandy-and-water. Poor Mrs. Morton was just buried, — quite shocked! Suddenly saw the boy in the streets. Plimmins rushed forward in the kindest way, was knocked down, hurt his arm, paid 2s. 6d. for lotion. Philip ran off, we ran after him, — could not find him. Forced to return home. Next day, a lawyer from a Mr. Beaufort — Mr. George Blackwell, a gentleman-like man — called. Mr. Beaufort will do anything for him in reason. Is there anything more I can do? I really am very uneasy about the lad, and Mrs. P. and I have a tiff about it: but that's nothing; thought I had best write to you for instructions.

Yours truly,

C. PLASKWITH.

P. S. Just open my letter to say, Bow Street officer just been here, has found out that the boy has been seen with a very suspicious character. They think he has left London. Bow Street officer wants to go after him, very expensive; so now you can decide.

Mr. Spencer scarcely listened to Mr. Plaskwith's letter, but of Arthur's he felt jealous. He would fain have been the only protector to Catherine's children; but he was the last man fitted to head the search now so necessary to prosecute with equal tact and energy.

A soft-hearted, soft-headed man, a confirmed valetudinarian, a day-dreamer, who had wasted away his life in dawdling and maundering over simple poetry, and sighing over his unhappy attachment; no child, no babe, was more thoroughly helpless than Mr. Spencer.

The task of investigation devolved, therefore, on Mr. Morton, and he went about it in a regular, plain, straightforward way. Handbills were circulated, constables employed, and a lawyer, accompanied by Mr. Spencer, despatched to the manufacturing districts towards which the orphans had been seen to direct their path.

## CHAPTER VII.

Give the gentle South  
Yet leave to court those sails.

BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER: *Beggar's Bush*.

Cut your cloth, sir,  
According to your calling.

*Ibid.*

MEANWHILE the brothers were far away, and He who feeds the young ravens made their paths pleasant to their feet. Philip had broken to Sidney the sad news of their mother's death, and Sidney had wept with bitter passion. But children, — what can *they* know of death? Their tears over graves dry sooner than the dews. It is melancholy to compare the depth, the endurance, the far-sighted, anxious, prayerful love of a parent, with the inconsiderate, frail, and evanescent affection of the infant, whose eyes the hues of the butterfly yet dazzle with delight. It was the night of their flight, and in the open air, when Philip (his arms round Sidney's waist) told his brother orphan that they were motherless. And the air was balmy, the skies filled with the effulgent presence of the August moon; the corn-fields stretched round them wide and far, and not a leaf trembled on the beech-tree beneath which they had sought shelter. It seemed as if nature herself smiled pityingly on their young sorrow, and said to them, "Grieve not for the dead: I, who live forever, *I* will be your mother!"

They crept, as the night deepened, into the warmer sleeping-place afforded by stacks of hay, mown that

summer and still fragrant. And the next morning the birds woke them betimes, to feel that liberty, at least, was with them, and to wander with her at will.

Who in his boyhood has not felt the delight of freedom and adventure?—to have the world of woods and sward before him; to escape restriction; to lean, for the first time, on his own resources; to rejoice in the wild but manly luxury of independence; to act the *Crusoe*; and to fancy a Friday in every footprint,—an island of his own in every field? Yes, in spite of their desolation, their loss, of the melancholy past, of the friendless future, the orphans were happy,—happy in their youth, their freedom, their love, their wanderings in the delicious air of the glorious August. Sometimes they came upon knots of reapers lingering in the shade of the hedgerows over their noon-day meal; and, grown sociable by travel, and bold by safety, they joined and partook of the rude fare with the zest and fatigue of youth. Sometimes, too, at night, they saw gleam afar, and red by the wood-side, the fires of gypsy tents. But these, with the superstition derived from old nursery tales, they scrupulously shunned, eying them with a mysterious awe. What heavenly twilights belong to that golden month!—the air so lucidly serene, as the purple of the clouds fades gradually away, and up soars, broad, round, intense, and luminous, the full moon which belongs to the joyous season! The fields then are greener than in the heats of July and June,—they have got back the luxury of a second spring. And still, beside the paths of the travellers, lingered on the hedges the clustering honeysuckle, the convolvulus glittered in the tangles of the brake, the hardy heath-flower smiled on the green waste.

And ever, at evening, they came, field after field,

upon those circles which recall to children so many charmed legends, and are fresh and frequent in that month, — the fairy rings! They thought, poor boys! that it was a good omen, and half fancied that the fairies protected them, as in the old time they had often protected the desolate and outcast.

They avoided the main roads, and all towns, with suspicious care. But sometimes they paused for food and rest at the obscure hostels of some scattered hamlet; though, more often, they loved to spread the simple food they purchased by the way under some thick tree, or beside a stream through whose limpid waters they could watch the trout glide and play. And they often preferred the chance shelter of a haystack or a shed to the less romantic repose offered by the small inns they alone dared to enter. They went in this much by the face and voice of the host or hostess. Once only Philip had entered a town, on the second day of their flight, and that solely for the purchase of ruder clothes, and a change of linen for Sidney, with some articles and implements of use necessary in their present course of shift and welcome hardship. A wise precaution; for, thus clad, they escaped suspicion.

So journeying, they consumed several days; and, having taken a direction quite opposite to that which led to the manufacturing districts, whither pursuit had been directed, they were now in the centre of another county, — in the neighborhood of one of the most considerable towns of England; and here Philip began to think their wanderings ought to cease, and it was time to settle on some definite course of life. He had carefully hoarded about his person, and most thriftily managed, the little fortune bequeathed by his mother. But Philip looked on this capital as a deposit sacred to



Sidney; it was not to be spent, but kept and augmented, — the nucleus for future wealth. Within the last few weeks his character was greatly ripened, and his powers of thought enlarged. He was no more a boy, — he was a man; he had another life to take care of. He resolved, then, to enter the town they were approaching, and to seek for some situation by which he might maintain both. Sidney was very loth to abandon their present roving life; but he allowed that the warm weather could not always last, and that in winter the fields would be less pleasant. He, therefore, with a sigh, yielded to his brother's reasonings.

They entered the fair and busy town of — one day at noon; and, after finding a small lodging, at which he deposited Sidney, who was fatigued with their day's walk, Philip sallied forth alone.

After his long rambling, Philip was pleased and struck with the broad bustling streets, the gay shops, — the evidences of opulence and trade. He thought it hard if he could not find there a market for the health and heart of sixteen. He strolled slowly and alone along the streets, till his attention was caught by a small corner-shop, in the window of which was placed a board, bearing this inscription: —

OFFICE FOR EMPLOYMENT. — RECIPROCAL ADVANTAGE.

Mr. John Clump's bureau open every day from ten till four. Clerks, servants, laborers, etc., provided with suitable situations. Terms moderate. N. B. — The oldest established office in the town.

Wanted, a good cook. An under-gardener.

What he sought was here! Philip entered, and saw a short, fat man with spectacles, seated before a desk, poring upon the well-filled leaves of a long register.

"Sir," said Philip, "I wish for a situation; I don't care what."

"Half-a-crown for entry, if you please. That's right. Now for particulars. Hum! — you don't look like a servant!"

"No; I wish for any place where my education can be of use. I can read and write; I know Latin and French; I can draw; I know arithmetic and summing."

"Very well; very genteel young man, — prepossessing appearance (that's a fudge!) — highly educated; usher in a school, eh?"

"What you like."

"References."

"I have none."

"Eh! — none!" and Mr. Clump fixed his spectacles full upon Philip.

Philip was prepared for the question, and had the sense to perceive that a frank reply was his best policy. "The fact is," said he, boldly, "I was well brought up; my father died; I was to be bound apprentice to a trade I disliked: I left it, and have now no friends."

"If I can help you, I will," said Mr. Clump, coldly. "Can't promise much. If you were a laborer, character might not matter; but educated young men must have a character. Hands always more useful than head. Education no avail nowadays; common, quite common. Call again on Monday."

Somewhat disappointed and chilled, Philip turned from the bureau; but he had a strong confidence in his own resources, and recovered his spirits as he mingled with the throng. He passed, at length, by a livery-stable, and paused, from old associations, as he saw a groom in the mews attempting to manage a young, hot horse, evidently unbroken. The master of the stables,

in a green short jacket and top-boots, with a long whip in his hand, was standing by, with one or two men who looked like horse-dealers.

"Come off, Clumsy! you can't manage that 'ere fine hanimal," cried the livery-man. "Ah! he 's a lamb, sir, if he were backed properly. But I has not a man in the yard as can ride, since Will died. Come off, I say, lubber!"

But to come off, without being thrown off, was more easily said than done. The horse was now plunging as if Juno had sent her gad-fly to him; and Philip, interested and excited, came near and nearer, till he stood by the side of the horse-dealers. The other hostlers ran to the help of their comrade, who, at last, with white lips and shaking knees, found himself on *terra firma*; while the horse, snorting hard, and rubbing his head against the breast and arms of the hostler who held him tightly by the rein, seemed to ask, in his own way, "Are there any more of you?"

A suspicion that the horse was an old acquaintance crossed Philip's mind; he went up to him, and a white spot over the left eye confirmed his doubts. It had been a foal reserved and reared for his own riding; one that, in his prosperous days, had ate bread from his hand, and followed him round the paddock like a dog; one that he had mounted in sport, without saddle, when his father's back was turned; a friend, in short, of the happy *lang syne*, — nay, the very friend to whom he had boasted his affection, when, standing with Arthur Beaufort under the summer sky, the whole world seemed to him full of friends. He put his hand on the horse's neck, and whispered, "Soho! So, Billy!" and the horse turned sharp round with a quick, joyous neigh.

"If you please, sir," said Philip, appealing to the

livery-man, "I will undertake to ride this horse, and take him over yon leaping-bar. Just let me try him."

"There's a fine spirited lad for you!" said the livery-man, much pleased at the offer. "Now, gentlemen, did I not tell you that 'ere hanimal had no vice if he was properly managed?"

The horse-dealers shook their heads.

"May I give him some bread first?" asked Philip; and the hostler was despatched to the house. Meanwhile the animal evinced various signs of pleasure and recognition, as Philip stroked and talked to him; and, finally, when he ate the bread from the young man's hand, the whole yard seemed in as much delight and surprise as if they had witnessed one of Monsieur Van Amburgh's exploits.

And now, Philip, still caressing the horse, slowly and cautiously mounted; the animal made one bound half across the yard, — a bound which sent all the horse-dealers into a corner, — and then went through his paces, one after the other, with as much ease and calm as if he had been broken in at Mr. Fozard's to carry a young lady. And when he crowned all by going thrice over the leaping-bar, and Philip, dismounting, threw the reins to the hostler, and turned triumphantly to the horse-dealer, that gentleman slapped him on the back, and said, emphatically, "Sir, you are a man! and I am proud to see you here."

Meanwhile the horse-dealers gathered round the animal, looked at his hoofs, felt his legs, examined his windpipe, and concluded the bargain, which, but for Philip, would have been very abruptly broken off. When the horse was led out of the yard, the livery-man, Mr. Stubmore, turned to Philip, who, leaning against the wall, followed the poor animal with mournful eyes.

"My good sir, you have sold that horse for me, — that you have! Anything as I can do for you? One good turn deserves another. Here's a brace of shiners."

"Thank you, sir! I want no money, but I do want some employment. I can be of use to you, perhaps, in your establishment. I have been brought up among horses all my life."

"Saw it, sir! that's very clear. I say, that 'ere horse knows you!" and the dealer put his finger to his nose. "Quite right to be mum! He was bred by an old customer of mine — famous rider! — Mr. Beaufort. Aha! that's where you knew him, I 'spose. Were you in his stables?"

"Hem, — I knew Mr. Beaufort well."

"Did you? You could not know a better man. Well, I shall be very glad to engage you, though you seem by your hands to be a bit of a gentleman, — eh? Never mind; don't want you to groom! — but superintend things. D'ye know accounts, eh?"

"Yes."

"Character?"

Philip repeated to Mr. Stubmore the story he had imparted to Mr. Clump. Somehow or other men who live much with horses are always more lax in their notions than the rest of mankind. Mr. Stubmore did not seem to grow more distant at Philip's narration.

"Understand you perfectly, my man. Brought up with them 'ere fine creturs, how could you nail your nose to a desk? I'll take you without more palaver. What's your name?"

"Philips."

"Come to-morrow, and we'll settle about wages. Sleep here?"

"No. I have a brother whom I must lodge with, and

for whose sake I wish to work. I should not like him to be at the stables, — he is too young. But I can come early every day, and go home late.”

“ Well, just as you like, man. Good-day.”

And thus, not from any mental accomplishment, — not from the result of his intellectual education, but from the mere physical capacity and brute habit of sticking fast on his saddle, did Philip Morton, in this great intelligent, gifted, civilized, enlightened community of Great Britain, find the means of earning his bread without stealing it.

## CHAPTER VIII.

*Don Salluste (souriant).* — Je parie  
Que vous ne pensiez pas à moi ?

*Ruy Blas.*

*Don Salluste.*                                      Cousin !

*Don César.* — De vos bienfaits je n'aurai nulle envie  
Tant que je trouverai vivant ma libre vie.<sup>1</sup>

*Ibid.*

PHILIP'S situation was agreeable to his habits. His great courage and skill in horsemanship were not the only qualifications useful to Mr. Stubmore: his education answered a useful purpose in accounts, and his manners and appearance were highly to the credit of the yard. The customers and loungers soon grew to like Gentleman Philips, as he was styled in the establishment. Mr. Stubmore conceived a real affection for him. So passed several weeks; and Philip, in this humble capacity, might have worked out his destinies in peace and comfort, but for a new cause of vexation that arose in Sidney. This boy was all in all to his brother. For him he had resisted the hearty and joyous invitations of Gawtreys (whose gay manner and high spirits had, it must be owned, captivated his fancy, despite the equivocal mystery of the man's avocations and condition); for him he now worked and toiled, cheerful and contented, — and him he sought to save from all to which he subjected

<sup>1</sup> *Don Sallust (smiling).* — I'll lay a wager you won't think of me ?

*Don Sallust.* — Cousin !

*Don César.* — I covet not your favors so, but I lead an independent life.

himself. He could not bear that that soft and delicate child should ever be exposed to the low and menial associations that now made up his own life; to the obscene slang of grooms and hostlers; to their coarse manners and rough contact. He kept him, therefore, apart and aloof in their little lodging, and hoped in time to lay by, so that Sidney might ultimately be restored, if not to his bright original sphere, at least to a higher grade than that to which Philip was himself condemned. But poor Sidney could not bear to be thus left alone; to lose sight of his brother from daybreak till bedtime; to have no one to amuse him. He fretted and pined away, — all the little inconsiderate selfishness, uneradicated from his breast by his sufferings, broke out the more, the more he felt that he was the first object on earth to Philip. Philip, thinking he might be more cheerful at a day-school, tried the experiment of placing him at one where the boys were much of his own age. But Sidney, on the third day, came back with a black eye, and he would return no more. Philip several times thought of changing their lodging for one where there were young people. But Sidney had taken a fancy to the kind old widow who was their landlady, and cried at the thought of removal. Unfortunately, the old woman was deaf and rheumatic; and though she bore teasing *ad libitum*, she could not entertain the child long on a stretch. Too young to be reasonable, Sidney could not or would not comprehend why his brother was so long away from him; and once he said, peevishly, —

“If I had thought I was to be moped up so, I would not have left Mrs. Morton. Tom was a bad boy, but still it was somebody to play with. I wish I had not gone away with you!”

This speech cut Philip to the heart. What, then, he



had taken from the child a respectable and safe shelter, — the sure provision of a life, — and the child now reproached him! When this was said to him, the tears gushed from his eyes.

“God forgive me, Sidney,” said he, and turned away.

But then, Sidney, who had the most endearing ways with him, seeing his brother so vexed, ran up and kissed him, and scolded himself for being naughty. Still the words were spoken, and their meaning rankled deep. Philip himself, too, was morbid in his excessive tenderness for this boy. There is a certain age, before the love for the sex commences, when the feeling of friendship is almost a passion. You see it constantly in girls and boys at school. It is the first vague craving of the heart after the master food of human life, — love. It has its jealousies and humors and caprices, like love itself. Philip was painfully acute to Sidney’s affection, was jealous of every particle of it. He dreaded lest his brother should ever be torn from him.

He would start from his sleep at night, and go to Sidney’s bed to see that he was there. He left him in the morning with forebodings, — he returned in the dark with fear. Meanwhile the character of this young man, so sweet and tender to Sidney, was gradually becoming more hard and stern to others. He had now climbed to the post of command in that rude establishment; and premature command in any sphere tends to make men unsocial and imperious.

One day Mr. Stubmore called him into his own counting-house, where stood a gentleman, with one hand in his coat-pocket, the other tapping his whip against his boot.

“Philips, show this gentleman the brown mare. She is a beauty in harness, is not she? This gentleman wants a match for his phe-aton.”

"She must step very hoigh," said the gentleman, turning round; and Philip recognized the beau in the stage-coach.

The recognition was simultaneous. The beau nodded, then whistled, and winked.

"Come, my man, I am at your service," said he.

Philip, with many misgivings, followed him across the yard. The gentleman then beckoned him to approach.

"You, sir, — moind I never peach, — setting up here in the honest line? Dull work, honesty, — eh?"

"Sir, I really don't know you."

"Daun't you recollect old Gregg's, the evening you came there with jolly Bill Gawtrety? Recollect that, eh?"

Philip was mute.

"I was among the gentlemen in the back-parlor who shook you by the hand, Bill's off to France then. I am tauking the provinces. I want a good horse, — the best in the yard, moind! Cutting such a swell here! My name is Captain de Burgh Smith, — never moind yours, my fine faellow. Now then, out with your rattlers, and keep your tongue in your mouth."

Philip mechanically ordered out the brown mare, which Captain Smith did not seem much to approve of; and, after glancing round the stables with great disdain of the collection, he sauntered out of the yard without saying more to Philip, though he stopped and spoke a few sentences to Mr. Stubmore. Philip hoped he had no design of purchasing, and that he was rid, for the present, of so awkward a customer. Mr. Stubmore approached Philip.

"Drive over the grays to Sir John," said he. "My lady wants a pair to job. A very pleasant man, that Captain Smith. I did not know you had been in a

yard before, — says you were the pet at Elmore's in London. Served him many a day. Pleasant gentleman-like man!"

"Y-e-s!" said Philip, hardly knowing what he said, and hurrying back into the stables to order out the grays.

The place to which he was bound was some miles distant, and it was sunset when he returned. As he drove into the main street, two men observed him closely.

"That is he! I am almost sure it is," said one.

"Oh! then it's all smooth sailing," replied the other.

"But, bless my eyes! you must be mistaken. See whom he's talking to now!"

At that moment, Captain de Burgh Smith, mounted on the brown mare, stopped Philip.

"Well, you see, I've bought her, — hope she'll turn out well. What do you really think she's worth? Not to buy, but to sell?"

"Sixty guineas."

"Well, that's a good day's work; and I owe it to you. The old faellow would not have trusted me if you had not served me at Elmore's, — ha! — ha! If he gets scent and looks shy at you, my lad, come to me. I'm at the Star Hotel for the next few days. I want a tight faellow like you, and you shall have a fair percentage. I'm none of your stingy ones. I say, I hope this devil is quiet? She cocks up her ears dawnsably!"

"Look you, sir!" said Philip, very gravely, and rising up in his break; "I know very little of you, and that little is not much to your credit. I give you fair warning, that I shall caution my employer against you."

"Will you, my fine faellow!—then take care of yourself."

"Stay! and if you dare utter a word against me," said Philip, with that frown to which his swarthy complexion and flashing eyes gave an expression of fierce power beyond his years, "you will find that, as I am the last to care for a threat, so I am the first to resent an injury!"

Thus saying, he drove on. Captain Smith affected a cough, and put his brown mare into a canter. The two men followed Philip as he drove into the yard.

"What do you know against the person he spoke to?" said one of them.

"Merely that he is one of the cunningest swells on this side the Bay," returned the other. "It looks bad for your young friend."

The first speaker shook his head, and made no reply.

On gaining the yard, Philip found that Mr. Stubmore had gone out, and was not expected home till the next day. He had some relations who were farmers, whom he often visited; to them he was probably gone.

Philip, therefore, deferring his intended caution against the gay captain till the morrow, and musing how the caution might be most discreetly given, walked homeward. He had just entered the lane that led to his lodgings, when he saw the two men I have spoken of on the other side of the street. The taller and better-dressed of the two left his comrade, and, crossing over to Philip, bowed, and thus accosted him,—

"Fine evening, Mr. Philip Morton. I am rejoiced to see you at last. You remember me,—Mr. Blackwell, Lincoln's Inn!"

"What is your business?" said Philip, halting, and speaking short and fiercely.

"Now don't be in a passion, my dear sir,—now don't. I am here on behalf of my clients, Messrs. Beaufort, sen. and jun. I have had such work to find you! Dear, dear! but you are a sly one! Ha! ha! Well, you see we have settled that little affair of Plaskwith's for you (might have been ugly), and now I hope you will —"

"To your business, sir! What do you want with me?"

"Why, now, don't be so quick! 'Tis not the way to do business. Suppose you step to my hotel. A glass of wine, now, Mr. Philip! We shall soon understand each other."

"Out of my path, or speak plainly!"

Thus put to it, the lawyer, casting a glance at his stout companion, who appeared to be contemplating the sunset on the other side of the way, came at once to the marrow of his subject.

"Well, then,—well, my say is soon said. Mr. Arthur Beaufort takes a most lively interest in you; it is he who has directed this inquiry. He bids me say that he shall be most happy—yes, most happy—to serve you in anything; and if you will but see him, he is in the town, I am sure you will be charmed with him,—most amiable young man!"

"Look you, sir," said Philip, drawing himself up: "neither from father, nor from son, nor from one of that family, on whose heads rest the mother's death and the orphan's curse, will I ever accept boon or benefit,—with them, voluntarily, I will hold no communion; if they force themselves in my path, let them beware! I am earning my bread in the way I desire: I am independent,—I want them not. Begone!"

With that, Philip pushed aside the lawyer and strode on rapidly. Mr. Blackwell, abashed and perplexed, returned to his companion.

Philip regained his home, and found Sidney stationed at the window alone, and with wistful eyes noting the flight of the gray moths, as they darted to and fro across the dull shrubs, that, variegated with lines for washing, adorned the plot of ground which the landlady called a garden. The elder brother had returned at an earlier hour than usual, and Sidney did not at first perceive him enter. When he did, he clapped his hands and ran to him.

"This is so good in you, Philip. I have been so dull; you will come and play now?"

"With all my heart, — where shall we play?" said Philip, with a cheerful smile.

"Oh, in the garden! — it's such a nice time for hide-and-seek."

"But is it not chill and damp for you?" said Philip.

"There now; you are always making excuses. I see you don't like it. I have no heart to play now."

Sidney seated himself and pouted.

"Poor Sidney! you *must* be dull without me. Yes, let us play; but put on this handkerchief;" and Philip took off his own cravat and tied it round his brother's neck and kissed him.

Sidney, whose anger seldom lasted long, was reconciled; and they went into the garden to play. It was a little spot, screened by an old moss-grown paling from the neighboring garden on the one side, and a lane on the other. They played with great glee till the night grew darker and the dews heavier.

"This must be the last time," cried Philip. "It is my turn to hide."

"Very well! Now, then."

Philip secreted himself behind a poplar; and as Sidney searched for him, and Philip stole round and round

the tree, the latter, happening to look across the paling, saw the dim outline of a man's figure in the lane, who appeared watching them. A thrill shot across his breast. These Beauports, associated in his thoughts with every ill omen and augury, had they set a spy upon his movements? He remained erect and gazing at the form, when Sidney discovered and ran up to him with his noisy laugh.

As the child clung to him, shouting with gladness, Philip, unheeding his playmate, called aloud and imperiously to the stranger,—

“What are you gaping at? Why do you stand watching us?”

The man muttered something, moved on, and disappeared.

“I hope there are no thieves here! I am so much afraid of thieves,” said Sidney, tremulously.

The fear grated on Philip's heart. Had he not himself, perhaps, been judged and treated as a thief? He said nothing, but drew his brother within: and there, in their little room, by the one poor candle, it was touching and beautiful to see these boys,—the tender patience of the elder lending itself to every whim of the younger, now building houses with cards, now telling stories of fairy and knight-errant, the sprightliest he could remember or invent. At length, all was over, and Sidney was undressing for the night, Philip, standing apart, said to him in a mournful voice,—

“Are you sad now, Sidney?”

“No! not when you are with me,—but that is so seldom.”

“Do you read none of the story-books I bought for you?”

“Sometimes! but one can't read all day.”

“ Ah! Sidney, if ever we should part, perhaps you will love me no longer! ”

“ Don’t say so,” said Sidney. “ But we sha’n’t part, Philip! ”

Philip sighed, and turned away as his brother leaped into bed. Something whispered to him that danger was near: and as it was, could Sidney grow up neglected and uneducated; was it thus that he was to fulfil his trust?



## CHAPTER IX.

But oh, what storm was in that mind! — CRABBE: *Ruth*.

WHILE Philip mused, and his brother fell into the happy sleep of childhood, in a room in the principal hotel of the town sat three persons, Arthur Beaufort, Mr. Spencer, and Mr. Blackwell.

"And so," said the first, "he rejected every overture from the Beauforts?"

"With a scorn I cannot convey to you!" replied the lawyer. "But the fact is, that he is evidently a lad of low habits; to think of his being a sort of helper to a horse-dealer! I suppose, sir, he was always in the stables in his father's time. Bad company depraves the taste very soon, but that is not the worst. Sharp declares that the man he was talking with, as I told you, is a common swindler. Depend on it, Mr. Arthur, *he* is incorrigible: all we can do is to save the brother."

"It is too dreadful to contemplate!" said Arthur, who, still ill and languid, reclined on a sofa.

"It is, indeed," said Mr. Spencer; "I am sure I should not know what to do with such a character; but the other poor child, it would be a mercy to get hold of *him*."

"Where is Mr. Sharp?" asked Arthur.

"Why," said the lawyer, "he has followed Philip at a distance to find out his lodgings, and learn if his brother is with him. Oh, here he is!" and Blackwell's companion in the earlier part of the evening entered.

"I have found him out, sir," said Mr. Sharp, wiping his forehead. "What a fierce un he is! I thought he

would have had a stone at my head; but we officers are used to it: we do our duty, and Providence makes our heads unkinimon hard!"

"Is the child with him?" asked Mr. Spencer.

"Yes, sir."

"A little, quiet, subdued boy?" asked the melancholy inhabitant of the Lakes.

"Quiet! Lord love you! never heard a noisier little urchin! There they were, romping and rousing in the garden, like a couple of jail-birds."

"You see," groaned Mr. Spencer, "he will make that poor child as bad as himself."

"What shall us do, Mr. Blackwell?" asked Sharp, who longed for his brandy-and-water.

"Why, I was thinking you might go to the horse-dealer the first thing in the morning; find out whether Philip is really thick with the swindler; and, perhaps, Mr. Stubmore may have some influence with him, if, without saying who he is —"

"Yes," interrupted Arthur, "do not expose his name."

"You could still hint that he ought to be induced to listen to his friends and go with them. Mr. Stubmore may be a respectable man, and —"

"I understand," said Sharp; "I have no doubt as how I can settle it. We learn to know human nature in our profession, — 'cause why? — we get at its blind side. Good-night, gentlemen!"

"You seem very pale, Mr. Arthur; you had better go to bed: you promised your father, you know."

"Yes, I am not well: I will go to bed:" and Arthur rose, lighted his candle, and sought his room.

"I will see Philip to-morrow," he said to himself; "he will listen to *me*."

The conduct of Arthur Beaufort in executing the

charge he had undertaken, had brought into full light all the most amiable and generous part of his character. As soon as he was sufficiently recovered, he had expressed so much anxiety as to the fate of the orphans, that to quiet him his father was forced to send for Mr. Blackwell. The lawyer had ascertained, through Dr. —, the name of Philip's employer at R——. At Arthur's request he went down to Mr. Plaskwith, and, arriving there the day after the return of the bookseller, learned those particulars with which Mr. Plaskwith's letter to Roger Morton has already made the reader acquainted. The lawyer then sent for Mr. Sharp, the officer before employed, and commissioned him to track the young man's whereabouts. That shrewd functionary soon reported that a youth every way answering to Philip's description had been introduced, the night of the escape, by a man celebrated, not indeed for robberies, or larcenies, or crimes of the coarser kind, but for address in all that more large and complex character which comes under the denomination of living upon one's wits, to a polite rendezvous frequented by persons of a similar profession. Since then, however, all clew of Philip was lost. But though Mr. Blackwell, in the way of his profession, was thus publicly benevolent towards the fugitive, he did not the less privately represent to his patrons, senior and junior, the very equivocal character that Philip must be allowed to bear. Like most lawyers, hard upon all who wander from the formal tracks, he unaffectedly regarded Philip's flight and absence as proofs of a very reprobate disposition; and this conduct was greatly aggravated in his eyes by Mr. Sharp's report, by which it appeared that after his escape Philip had so suddenly, and, as it were, so naturally, taken to such equivocal companionship. Mr. Robert Beaufort, already prejudiced against

Philip, viewed matters in the same light as the lawyer; and the story of his supposed predilections reached Arthur's ears in so distorted a shape that even he was staggered and revolted: still Philip was so young, Arthur's oath to the orphans' mother so recent, — and if thus early inclined to wrong courses, should not every effort be made to lure him back to the straight path? With these views and reasonings, as soon as he was able, Arthur himself visited Mrs. Lacy, and the note from Philip, which the good lady put into his hands, affected him deeply, and confirmed all his previous resolutions. Mrs. Lacy was very anxious to get at his name; but Arthur, having heard that Philip had refused all aid from his father and Mr. Blackwell, thought that the young man's pride might work equally against himself, and therefore evaded the landlady's curiosity. He wrote the next day the letter we have seen to Mr. Roger Morton, whose address Catherine had given to him: and by return of post came a letter from the linen-draper narrating the flight of Sidney, as it was supposed, with his brother. This news so excited Arthur, that he insisted on going down to N—— at once, and joining in the search. His father, alarmed for his health, positively refused; and the consequence was an increase of fever, a consultation with the doctors, and a declaration that Mr. Arthur was in that state that it would be dangerous not to let him have his own way. Mr. Beaufort was forced to yield, and with Blackwell and Mr. Sharp accompanied his son to N——. The inquiries, hitherto fruitless, then assumed a more regular and businesslike character. By little and little they came, through the aid of Mr. Sharp, upon the right clew, up to a certain point. But here there was a double scent: two youths answering the description had been seen at a small vil-

lage; then there came those who asserted that they had seen the same youths at a seaport in one direction; others, who deposed to their having taken the road to an inland town in the other. This had induced Arthur and his father to part company. Mr. Beaufort, accompanied by Roger Morton, went to the seaport; and Arthur, with Mr. Spencer and Mr. Sharp, more fortunate, tracked the fugitives to their retreat. As for Mr. Beaufort, senior, now that his mind was more at ease about his son, he was thoroughly sick of the whole thing; greatly bored by the society of Mr. Morton; very much ashamed that he, so respectable and great a man, should be employed on such an errand; more afraid of, than pleased with any chance of discovering the fierce Philip; and secretly resolved upon slinking back to London at the first reasonable excuse.

The next morning Mr. Sharp entered betimes Mr. Stubmore's counting-house. In the yard he caught a glimpse of Philip, and managed to keep himself unseen by that young gentleman.

"Mr. Stubmore, I think?"

"At your service, sir."

Mr. Sharp shut the glass door mysteriously, and, lifting up the corner of a green curtain that covered the panes, beckoned to the startled Stubmore to approach.

"You see that 'ere young man in the velveteen jacket; you employs him?"

"I do, sir; he is my right hand."

"Well, now, don't be frightened, but his friends are arter him. He has got into bad ways, and we want you to give him a little good advice."

"Pooh! I know he has run away, like a fine-spirited lad as he is; and as long as he likes to stay with me, they as comes after him may get a ducking in the horse-trough!"

"Be you a father, — a father of a family, Mr. Stubmore?" said Sharp, thrusting his hands into his breeches-pockets, swelling out his stomach, and pursing up his lips with great solemnity.

"Nonsense! no gammon with me! Take your chaff to the goslings. I tells you I can't do without that 'ere lad. Every man to himself."

"Oho!" thought Sharp, "I must change the tack. Mr. Stubmore," said he, taking a stool, "you speaks like a sensible man. No one can reasonably go for to ask a gentleman to go for to inconvenience his-self. But what do you know of that 'ere youngster? Had you a *carakter* with him?"

"What 's that to you?"

"Why, it 's more to yourself, Mr. Stubmore; he is but a lad, and if he goes back to his friends they may take care of him, but he got into a bad set afore he come here. Do you know a good-looking chap with whiskers, who talks of his phe-aton, and was riding last night on a brown mare?"

"Y-e-s!" said Mr. Stubmore, growing rather pale, "and I knows the mare, too. Why, sir, I sold him that mare!"

"Did he pay you for her?"

"Why, to be sure, he gave me a check on Coutts."

"And you took it! My eyes! what a flat!" Here Mr. Sharp closed the orbs he had invoked, and whistled with that self-hugging delight which men invariably feel when another man is taken in.

Mr. Stubmore became evidently nervous.

"Why, what now! — you don't think I 'm done? I did not let him have the mare till I went to the hotel, — found he was cutting a great dash there, a groom, a phe-aton, and a fine horse, and as extravagant as the devil!"

"O Lord! — O Lord! what a world this is! What does he call his-self?"

"Why, here 's the check, — George Frederick de — de Burgh Smith."

"Put it in your pipe, my man, — put it in your pipe; not worth a d——!"

"And who the deuce are you, sir?" bawled out Mr. Stubmore, in an equal rage both with himself and his guest.

"I, sir," said the visitor, rising with great dignity, — "I, sir, am of the great Bow Street Office, and my name is John Sharp!"

Mr. Stubmore nearly fell off his stool, his eyes rolled in his head, and his teeth chattered. Mr. Sharp perceived the advantage he had gained, and continued, —

"Yes, sir; and I could have much to say against that chap, who is nothing more or less than Dashing Jerry, as has ruined more girls and more tradesmen than any lord in the land. And so I called to give you a bit of caution; 'for,' says I to myself, 'Mr. Stubmore is a respectable man.'"

"I hope I am, sir," said the crest-fallen horse-dealer; "that was always my character."

"And the father of a family?"

"Three boys and a babe at the buzzom," said Mr. Stubmore, pathetically.

"And he sha'n't be taken in if I can help it! That 'ere young man as I am arter, you see, knows Captain Smith, — ha! ha! — smell a rat now — eh?"

"Captain Smith said he knew him, — the wiper, — and that 's what made me so green."

"Well, we must not be hard on the youngster; 'cause why, he has friends as is gemmen. But you tell him to go back to his poor, dear relations, and all shall be

forgiven; and say as how you won't keep him; and if he don't go back, he 'll have to get his livelihood without a carakter; and use your influence with him like a man and a Christian, and what 's more, like the father of a family, Mr. Stubmore, with three boys and a babe at the buzzom. You won't keep him now?"

"Keep him! I have had a precious escape. I'd better go and see after the mare."

"I doubt if you 'll find her; the captain caught a sight of me this morning. Why, he lodges at our hotel! He 's off by this time!"

"And why the devil did you let him go?"

"'Cause I had no writ agin him!" said the Bow Street officer; and he walked straight out of the counting-office, satisfied that he had "done the job."

To snatch his hat, to run to the hotel, to find that Captain Smith had indeed gone off in his phaeton, bag and baggage, the same as he came, except that he had now two horses to the phaeton instead of one, — having left with the landlord the amount of his bill in another check upon Coutts, — was the work of five minutes with Mr. Stubmore. He returned home, panting and purple with indignation and wounded feeling.

"To think that chap, whom I took into my yard like a son, should have connived at this! 'Tain't the money, — 'tis the willany that 'flicts me!" muttered Mr. Stubmore, as he re-entered the mews.

Here he came plump upon Philip, who said, —

"Sir, I wished to see you, to say that you had better take care of Captain Smith."

"Oh, you did, did you, now he 's gone? — 'scended off to America, I daresay, by this time. Now look ye, young man: your friends are after you, I won't say anything agin you; but you go back to them, — I wash



my hands of you. Quite too much for me. There's your week, and never let me catch you in my yard agin, that's all!"

Philip dropped the money which Stubmore had put into his hand. "My friends! — friends have been with you, have they? I thought so,—I thank them. And so you part with me? Well, you have been kind, very kind; let us part kindly;" and he held out his hand.

Mr. Stubmore was softened, — he touched the hand held out to him, and looked doubtful a moment; but Captain de Burgh Smith's check for eighty guineas suddenly rose before his eyes. He turned on his heel abruptly, and said, over his shoulder, —

"Don't go after Captain Smith (he'll come to the gallows); mend your ways, and be ruled by your poor, dear relatives, whose hearts you are breaking."

"Captain Smith! Did my relations tell you?"

"Yes — yes; they told me all, — that is, they sent to tell me; so you see I'm d—d soft not to lay hold of you. But, perhaps, if they be gemmen, they'll act as sich, and cash me this here check!"

But the last words were said to air. Philip had rushed from the yard.

With a heaving breast, and every nerve in his body quivering with wrath, the proud, unhappy boy strode through the gay streets. They had betrayed him then, these accursed Beauforts; they circled his steps with schemes to drive him like a deer into the snare of their loathsome charity! The roof was to be taken from his head, the bread from his lips, so that he might fawn at their knees for bounty. "But they shall not break my spirit, nor steal away my curse. No, my dead mother, never!"

As he thus muttered, he passed through a patch of waste land that led to the row of houses in which his lodging was placed. And here a voice called to him, and a hand was laid on his shoulder. He turned, and Arthur Beaufort, who had followed him from the street, stood behind him. Philip did not, at the first glance, recognize his cousin. Illness had so altered him, and his dress was so different from that in which he had first and last beheld him. The contrast between the two young men was remarkable. Philip was clad in the rough garb suited to his late calling, — a jacket of black velveteen, ill-fitting and ill-fashioned, loose fustian trousers, coarse shoes, his hat set deep over his pent eyebrows, his raven hair long and neglected. He was just at that age when one with strong features and robust frame is at the worst in point of appearance: the sinewy proportions not yet sufficiently fleshed, and seeming inharmonious and undeveloped, — precisely in proportion, perhaps, to the symmetry towards which they insensibly mature; the contour of the face sharpened from the roundness of boyhood, and losing its bloom without yet acquiring that relief and shadow which make the expression and dignity of the masculine countenance. Thus accoutred, thus gaunt and uncouth, stood Morton. Arthur Beaufort, always refined in his appearance, seemed yet more so from the almost feminine delicacy which ill health threw over his pale complexion and graceful figure; that sort of unconscious elegance which belongs to the dress of the rich when they are young, — seen most in minutiae, not observable, perhaps, by themselves, — marked forcibly and painfully the distinction of rank between the two. That distinction Beaufort did not feel; but at a glance it was visible to Philip.

The past rushed back on him. The sunny lawn, the

gun offered and rejected, — the pride of old, much less haughtily than the pride of to-day.

"Philip," said Beaufort, feebly, "they tell me you will not accept any kindness from me or mine. Ah! if you knew how we have sought you!"

"Knew!" cried Philip, savagely, for that unlucky sentence recalled to him his late interview with his employer, and his present destitution. "Knew! And why have you dared to hunt me out, and halloo me down? — why must this insolent tyranny, that assumes the right over these limbs and this free will, betray and expose me and my wretchedness wherever I turn?"

"Your poor mother — " began Beaufort.

"Name her not with your lips, — name her not!" cried Philip, growing livid with his emotions. "Talk not of the mercy — the forethought — a Beaufort could show to her and her offspring! I accept it not, — I believe it not. Oh, yes! you follow me now with your false kindness; and why? Because your father, — your vain, hollow, heartless father — "

"Hold!" said Beaufort, in a tone of such reproach that it startled the wild heart on which it fell; "it is my father you speak of. Let the son respect the son."

"No — no — no! I will respect none of your race. I tell you, your father fears me. I tell you, that my last words to him ring in his ears! My wrongs! Arthur Beaufort, when you are absent I seek to forget them; in your abhorred presence they revive, they — "

He stopped, almost choked with his passion, but continued instantly, with equal intensity of fervor, —

"Were yon tree the gibbet, and to touch your hand could alone save me from it, I would scorn your aid! Aid! the very thought fires my blood and nerves my hand. Aid! Will a Beaufort give me back my birth-

right, — restore my dead mother's fair name? Minion! — sleek, dainty, luxurious minion! — out of my path! You have my fortune, my station, my rights; I have but poverty and hate and disdain. I swear, again and again, that you shall not purchase these from me."

"But, Philip — Philip," cried Beaufort, catching his arm; "hear one — hear one who stood by your —"

The sentence that would have saved the outcast from the demons that were darkening and swooping round his soul, died upon the young protector's lips. Blinded, maddened, excited, and exasperated, almost out of humanity itself, Philip fiercely, brutally, swung aside the enfeebled form that sought to cling to him, and Beaufort fell at his feet. Morton stopped, glared at him with clenched hands and a smiling lip, sprang over his prostrate form, and bounded to his home.

He slackened his pace as he neared the house, and looked behind; but Beaufort had not followed him. He entered the house, and found Sidney in the room, with a countenance so much more gay than that he had lately worn, that, absorbed as he was in thought and passion, it yet did not fail to strike him.

"What has pleased you, Sidney?"

The child smiled.

"Ah! it is a secret, — I was not to tell you. But I'm sure you are not the naughty boy he says you are."

"He! who?"

"Don't look so angry, Philip: you frighten me!"

"And you torture me. Who could malign one brother to the other?"

"Oh! it was all meant very kindly, — there's been such a nice, dear, good gentleman here, and he cried when he saw me, and said he knew dear mamma. Well, and he has promised to take me home with him and

give me a pretty pony, — as pretty, as pretty oh, as pretty as it can be got! And he is to call again and tell me more: I think he is a fairy, Philip.”

“Did he say that he was to take *me*, too, Sidney?” said Morton, seating himself, and looking very pale. At that question Sidney hung his head.

“No, brother, — he says you won’t go, and that you are a bad boy; and that you associate with wicked people; and that you want to keep me shut up here and not let any one be good to me. But I told him I did not believe that, — yes, indeed, I told him so.”

And Sidney endeavored caressingly to withdraw the hands that his brother placed before his face.

Morton started up, and walked hastily to and fro the room. “This,” thought he, “is another emissary of the Beauforts, — perhaps the lawyer; they will take *him* from me, — the last thing left to love and hope for. I will foil them. — Sidney,” he said aloud; “we must go hence to-day, this very hour, — nay, instantly.”

“What! away from this nice good gentleman?”

“Curse him! yes, away from him. Do not cry: it is of no use, — you *must* go.”

This was said more harshly than Philip had ever yet spoken to Sidney; and when he had said it, he left the room to settle with the landlady, and to pack up their scanty effects. In another hour the brothers had turned their backs on the town.

## CHAPTER X.

I'll carry thee  
In Sorrow's arms to welcome Misery.

HEYWOOD's *Duchess of Suffolk*.

Who's here besides foul weather? — SHAKESPEARE: *Lear*.

THE sun was as bright and the sky as calm during this journey of the orphans as the last. They avoided, as before, the main roads, and their way lay through landscapes that might have charmed a Gainsborough's eye. Autumn scattered its last hues of gold over the various foliage, and the poppy glowed from the hedges, and the wild convolvuluses here and there still gleamed on the wayside with a parting smile.

At times, over the sloping stubbles, broke the sound of the sportman's gun; and, ever and anon, by stream and sedge, they startled the shy wildfowl, just come from the far lands, nor yet settled in the new haunts too soon to be invaded.

But there was no longer in the travellers the same hearts that had made light of hardship and fatigue. Sidney was no longer flying from a harsh master, and his step was not elastic with the energy of fear that looked behind, and of hope that smiled before. He was going a toilsome, weary journey, he knew not why nor whither; just, too, when he had made a friend, whose soothing words haunted his childish fancy. He was displeased with Philip, and in sullen and silent thoughtfulness slowly plodded behind him; and Morton himself was

gloomy, and knew not where in the world to seek a future.

They arrived at dusk at a small inn, not so far distant from the town they had left as Morton could have wished ; but the days were shorter than in their first flight.

They were shown into a small, sanded parlor, which Sidney eyed with great disgust ; nor did he seem more pleased with the hacked and jagged leg of cold mutton, which was all that the hostess set before them for supper. Philip in vain endeavored to cheer him up, and ate to set him the example. He felt relieved when, under the auspices of a good-looking, good-natured chambermaid, Sidney retired to rest, and he was left in the parlor to his own meditations. Hitherto it had been a happy thing for Morton that he had had some one dependent on him ; that feeling had given him perseverance, patience, fortitude, and hope. But now, dispirited and sad, he felt rather the horror of being responsible for a human life, without seeing the means to discharge the trust. It was clear, even to his experience, that he was not likely to find another employer as facile as Mr. Stubmore ; and, wherever he went, he felt as if his destiny stalked at his back. He took out his little fortune and spread it on the table, counting it over and over ; it had remained pretty stationary since his service with Mr. Stubmore, for Sidney had swallowed up the wages of his hire. While thus employed the door opened, and the chambermaid, showing in a gentleman, said, " We have no other room, sir."

" Very well, then,— I'm not particular ; a tumbler of braundy-and-water, stiffish,— cold without,— the newspaper, and a cigar. You'll excuse smoking, sir ? "

Philip looked up from his hoard, and Captain de Burgh Smith stood before him.

"Ah!" said the latter, "well met!" And, closing the door, he took off his greatcoat, seated himself near Philip, and bent both his eyes with considerable wistfulness on the neat rows into which Philip's banknotes, sovereigns, and shillings were arrayed.

"Pretty little sum for pocket-money; caush in hand goes a great way, properly invested. You must have been very lucky. Well, so I suppose you are surprised to see me here without my phe-aton?"

"I wish I had never seen you at all," replied Philip, uncourteously, and restoring his money to his pocket; "your fraud upon Mr. Stubmore, and your assurance that you knew me, have set me adrift upon the world."

"What's one man's meat is another man's poison," said the captain, philosophically; "no use fretting,—care killed a cat. I am as badly off as you; for, hang me, if there was not a Bow Street runner in the town. I caught his eye fixed on me like a gimlet; so I bolted, went to N——, left my phe-aton and groom there for the present, and have doubled back to baffle pursuit, and cut across the country. You recollect that noice girl we saw in the coach; 'gad, I served her spouse that is to be a praetty trick! Borrowed his money under pretence of investing it in the New Grand Anti-Dry-Rot Company,—cool hundred; it's only just gone, sir."

Here the chambermaid entered with the brandy-and-water, the newspaper, and cigar; the captain lighted the last, took a deep sup from the beverage, and said, gayly,—

"Well, now, let us join fortunes; we are both, as you say, 'adrift.' Best way to staund the breeze is to unite the caubles."

Philip shook his head, and, displeased with his companion, sought his pillow. He took care to put his money under his head, and to lock his door.



The brothers started at daybreak; Sidney was even more discontented than on the previous day. The weather was hot and oppressive; they rested for some hours at noon, and in the cool of the evening renewed their way. Philip had made up his mind to steer for a town in the thick of a hunting district, where he hoped his equestrian capacities might again befriend him; and their path now lay through a chain of vast dreary commons, which gave them at least the advantage to skirt the roadside unobserved. But, somehow or other, either Philip had been misinformed as to an inn where he had proposed to pass the night, or he had missed it; for the clouds darkened, and the sun went down, and no vestige of human habitation was discernible. Sidney, foot-sore and querulous, began to weep, and declare that he could stir no further; and while Philip, whose iron frame defied fatigue, compassionately paused to rest his brother, a low roll of thunder broke upon the gloomy air. "There will be a storm," said he, anxiously. "Come on, — pray, Sidney, come on."

"It is so cruel in you, brother Philip," replied Sidney, sobbing. "I wish I had never, never gone with you."

A flash of lightning, that illuminated the whole heavens, lingered round Sidney's pale face as he spoke; and Philip threw himself instinctively on the child, as if to protect him even from the wrath of the unshelterable flame. Sidney, hushed and terrified, clung to his brother's breast; after a pause, he silently consented to resume their journey. But now the storm came near and nearer to the wanderers. The darkness grew rapidly more intense, save when the lightning lit up heaven and earth alike with intolerable lustre. And when at length the rain began to fall in merciless and drenching torrents, even Philip's brave heart failed him. How could he,

ask Sidney to proceed, when they could scarcely see an inch before them? — all that could now be done was to gain the highroad, and hope for some passing conveyance. With fits and starts, and by the glare of the lightning, they attained their object; and stood at last on the great broad thoroughfare, along which, since the day when the Roman carved it from the waste, misery hath plodded, and luxury rolled, their common way.

Philip had stripped handkerchief, coat, vest, all to shelter Sidney; and he felt a kind of strange pleasure through the dark even to hear Sidney's voice wail and moan. But that voice grew more languid and faint; it ceased,—Sidney's weight hung heavy—heavier on the fostering arm.

"For Heaven's sake, speak! — speak, Sidney! — only one word,— I will carry you in my arms! "

"I think I am dying," replied Sidney, in a low murmur; "I am so tired and worn out, I can go no further,—I must lie here." And he sank at once upon the reeking grass beside the road. At this time the rain gradually relaxed; the clouds broke away; a gray light succeeded to the darkness; the lightning was more distant; and the thunder rolled onward in its awful path. Kneeling on the ground, Philip supported his brother in his arms, and cast his pleading eyes upward to the softening terrors of the sky. A star — a solitary star — broke out for one moment, as if to smile comfort upon him, and then vanished. But lo! in the distance there suddenly gleamed a red, steady light, like that in some solitary window; it was no will-o'-the-wisp, it was too stationary, — human shelter was then nearer than he had thought for. He pointed to the light, and whispered, "Rouse yourself, one struggle more; it cannot be far off."

"It is impossible, — I cannot stir," answered Sidney; and a sudden flash of lightning showed his countenance, ghastly, as if with the damps of death. What could the brother do, — stay there, and see the boy perish before his eyes; leave him on the road, and fly to the friendly light? The last plan was the sole one left, yet he shrank from it in greater terror than the first. Was that a step that he heard across the road? He held his breath to listen; a form became dimly visible; it approached.

Philip shouted aloud.

"What now?" answered the voice, and it seemed familiar to Morton's ear. He sprang forward; and putting his face close to the wayfarer, thought to recognize the features of Captain de Burgh Smith. The captain, whose eyes were yet more accustomed to the dark, made the first overture.

"Why, my lad, it is you then! 'Gad, you frightened me!"

Odious as this man had hitherto been to Philip, he was as welcome to him as daylight now; he grasped his hand: "My brother, a child, is here, dying, I fear, with cold and fatigue, he cannot stir. Will you stay with him — support him — but for a few moments, while I make to yon light? See, I have money, — plenty of money!"

"My good lad, it's very ugly work staying here at this hour: still, — where's the choild?"

"Here, here! make haste, raise him! that's right! God bless you! I shall be back ere you think me gone."

He sprang from the road, and plunged through the heath, the furze, the rank glistening pools, straight towards the light, as the swimmer towards the shore.

The captain, though a rogue, was human; and when life — an innocent life — is at stake, even a rogue's heart

rises up from its weedy bed. He muttered a few oaths, it is true, but he held the child in his arms, and, taking out a little tin case, poured some brandy down Sidney's throat, and then, by way of company, down his own. The cordial revived the boy; he opened his eyes, and said, "I think I can go on, now, Philip."

We must return to Arthur Beaufort. He was naturally, though gentle, a person of high spirit, and not without pride. He rose from the ground with bitter, resentful feelings, and a blushing cheek, and went his way to the hotel. Here he found Mr. Spencer, just returned from his visit to Sidney. Enchanted with the soft and endearing manners of his lost Catherine's son, and deeply affected with the resemblance the child bore to the mother, as *he* had seen her last at the gay and rosy age of fair sixteen, his description of the younger brother drew Beaufort's indignant thoughts from the elder. He cordially concurred with Mr. Spencer in the wish to save one so gentle from the domination of one so fierce; and this, after all, was the child Catherine had most strongly commended to him. She had said little of the elder; perhaps she had been aware of his ungracious and untractable nature, and, as it seemed to Arthur Beaufort, his predilections for a coarse and low career.

"Yes," said he, "this boy, then, shall console me for the perverse brutality of the other. He shall, indeed, drink of my cup, and eat of my bread, and be to me as a brother."

"What!" said Mr. Spencer, changing countenance, "you do not intend to take Sidney to live with *you*? I meant him for *my* son,—my adopted son."

"No; generous as you are," said Arthur, pressing his hand, "this charge devolves on me,—it is my right. I

am the orphan's relation,—his mother consigned him to me. But he shall be taught to love you not the less."

Mr. Spencer was silent. He could not bear the thought of losing Sidney as an inmate of his cheerless home, a tender relic of his early love. From that moment he began to contemplate the possibility of securing Sidney to himself, unknown to Beaufort.

The plans both of Arthur and Spencer were interrupted by the sudden retreat of the brothers. They determined to depart different ways in search of them. Spencer, as the more helpless of the two, obtained the aid of Mr. Sharp; Beaufort departed with the lawyer.

Two travellers, in a hired barouche, were slowly dragged by a pair of jaded posters along the commons I have just described.

"I think," said one, "that the storm is very much abated; heigho! what an unpleasant night!"

"Unkimmon ugly, sir," answered the other; "and an awful long stage, eighteen miles. These here remote places are quite behind the age, sir,—quite. However, I think we shall kitch them now."

"I am very much afraid of that eldest boy, Sharp. He seems a dreadful vagabond."

"You see, sir, quite hand in glove with Dashing Jerry; met in the same inn last night,—preconcerted, you may be quite sure. It would be the best day's job I have done this many a day to save that 'ere little fellow from being corrupted. You sees he is just of a size to be useful to these bad karakters. If they took to burglary, he would be a treasure to them,—slip him through a pane of glass like a ferret, sir."

"Don't talk of it, Sharp," said Mr. Spencer, with a groan; "and recollect, if we get hold of him, that you are not to say a word to Mr. Beaufort."

"I understand, sir; and I always goes with the gemman who behaves most like a gemman."

Here a loud halloo was heard close by the horses' heads.

"Good heavens, if that is a footpad!" said Mr. Spencer, shaking violently.

"Lord, sir, I have my barkers with me. Who's there?"

The barouche stopped,—a man came to the window.

"Excuse me, sir," said the stranger; "but there is a poor boy here so tired and ill that I fear he will never reach the next town, unless you will kindly give him a lift."

"A poor boy!" said Mr. Spencer, poking his head over the head of Mr. Sharp. "Where?"

"If you would just drop him at the King's Awrms, it would be a chaurity," said the man.

Sharp pinched Mr. Spencer on the shoulder. "That's Dashing Jerry; I'll get out." So saying, he opened the door, jumped into the road, and presently re-appeared with the lost and welcome Sidney in his arms. "Ben't this the boy?" he whispered to Mr. Spencer; and, taking the lamp from the carriage, he raised it to the child's face.

"It is! it is! God be thanked!" exclaimed the worthy man.

"Will you leave him at the King's Awrms?—we shall be there in an hour or two," cried the captain.

"We! Who's *we*?" said Sharp, gruffly.

"Why, myself and the choild's brother."

"Oh!" said Sharp, raising the lantern to his own face; "you knows me, I think, Master Jerry? Let me kitch you agin, that's all. And give my compliments to your 'sociate, and say, if he prosecutes this here

hurchin any more, we'll settle his bizness for him; and so take a hint and make yourself scarce, old boy!"

With that Mr. Sharp jumped into the barouche, and bade the postboy drive on as fast as he could.

Ten minutes after this abduction, Philip, followed by two laborers, with a barrow, a lantern, and two blankets, returned from the hospitable farm to which the light had conducted him. The spot where he had left Sidney, and which he knew by a neighboring milestone, was vacant; he shouted an alarm, and the captain answered from the distance of some threescore yards. Philip came to him. "Where is my brother?"

"Gone away in a barouche and pair. Devil take me if I understaund it." And the captain proceeded to give a confused account of what had passed.

"My brother! my brother! they have torn thee from me, then!" cried Philip, and he fell to the earth insensible.

## CHAPTER XI.

*Vous me rendrez mon frère !<sup>1</sup> — CASIMER DELAVIGNE : Les Enfans d'Edouard.*

ONE evening, a week after this event, a wild, tattered, haggard youth knocked at the door of Mr. Robert Beaufort.

The porter slowly presented himself.

"Is your master at home? I must see him instantly."

"That's more than you can, my man; my master does not see the like of you this time of night," replied the porter, eying the ragged apparition before him with great disdain.

"See me he must and shall," replied the young man; and, as the porter blocked up the entrance, he grasped his collar with a hand of iron, swung him, huge as he was, aside, and strode into the spacious hall.

"Stop! stop!" cried the porter, recovering himself. "James! John! here's a go!"

Mr. Robert Beaufort had been back in town several days. Mrs. Beaufort, who was waiting his return from his club, was in the dining-room. Hearing a noise in the hall, she opened the door, and saw the strange grim figure I have described advancing towards her. "Who are you?" she said; "what do you want?"

"I am Philip Morton. Who are you?"

"My husband," said Mrs. Beaufort shrinking into the parlor, while Morton followed her, and closed the door, — "my husband, Mr. Beaufort, is not at home."

<sup>1</sup> You shall restore me my brother!



"You are Mrs. Beaufort, then! Well, you can understand me. I want my brother. He has been basely reft from me. Tell me where he is, and I will forgive all. Restore him to me, and I will bless you and yours." And Philip fell on his knees and grasped the train of her gown.

"I know nothing of your brother, Mr. Morton," cried Mrs. Beaufort, surprised and alarmed. "Arthur, whom we expect every day, writes us word that all search for him has been in vain."

"Ha! you admit the search?" cried Morton, rising and clenching his hands. "And who else but you or yours would have parted brother and brother? Answer me where he is. No subterfuge, madam: I am desperate!"

Mrs. Beaufort, though a woman of that worldly coldness and indifference which, on ordinary occasions, supply the place of courage, was extremely terrified by the tone and mien of her rude guest. She laid her hand on the bell; but Morton seized her arm, and, holding it sternly, said, while his dark eyes shot fire through the glimmering room, "I will not stir hence till you have told me. Will you reject my gratitude, my blessing? Beware! Again, where have you hid my brother?"

At that instant the door opened, and Mr. Robert Beaufort entered. The lady, with a shriek of joy, wrenched herself from Philip's grasp, and flew to her husband.

"Save me from this ruffian!" she said, with an hysterical sob.

Mr. Beaufort, who had heard from Blackwell strange accounts of Philip's obdurate perverseness, vile associates, and unredeemable character, was roused from his usual timidity by the appeal of his wife.

"Insolent probrate!" he said, advancing to Philip;

"after all the absurd goodness of my son and myself; after rejecting all our offers, and persisting in your miserable and vicious conduct, — how dare you presume to force yourself into this house? Begone, or I will send for the constables to remove you!"

"Man, man," cried Philip, restraining the fury that shook him from head to foot, "I care not for your threats, — I scarcely hear your abuse; your son, or yourself, has stolen away my brother. Tell me only where he is; let me see him once more. Do not drive me hence without one word of justice, of pity. I implore you, on my knees I implore you, — yes, I, *I* implore you, Robert Beaufort, to have mercy on your brother's son. Where is Sidney?"

Like all mean and cowardly men, Robert Beaufort was rather encouraged than softened by Philip's abrupt humility.

"I know nothing of your brother; and if this is not all some villanous trick, — which it may be, — I am heartily rejoiced that he, poor child! is rescued from the contamination of such a companion," answered Beaufort.

"I am at your feet still; again, for the last time, clinging to you a suppliant: I pray you to tell me the truth."

Mr. Beaufort, more and more exasperated by Morton's forbearance, raised his hand as if to strike; when, at that moment, one hitherto unobserved — one who, terrified by the scene she had witnessed but could not comprehend, had slunk into a dark corner of the room — now came from her retreat: and a child's soft voice was heard, saying —

"Do not strike him, papa! — let him have his brother!"

Mr. Beaufort's arm fell to his side: kneeling before him, and by the outcast's side, was his own young daughter; she had crept into the room unobserved, when her father entered. Through the dim shadows, relieved only by the red and fitful gleam of the fire, he saw her fair meek face looking up wistfully at his own, with tears of excitement, and perhaps of pity, — for children have a quick insight into the reality of grief in those not far removed from their own years, — glistening in her soft eyes. Philip looked round bewildered, and he saw that face which seemed to him, at such a time, like the face of an angel.

"Hear her!" he murmured: "oh, hear her! For her sake, do not sever one orphan from the other!"

"Take away that child, Mrs. Beaufort," cried Robert, angrily. "Will you let her disgrace herself thus? And you, sir, begone from this roof; and when you can approach me with due respect, I will give you, as I said I would, the means to get an honest living!"

Philip rose; Mrs. Beaufort had already led away her daughter, and she took that opportunity of sending in the servants: their forms filled up the doorway.

"Will you go?" continued Mr. Beaufort, more and more emboldened, as he saw the menials at hand, "or shall *they* expel you?"

"It is enough, sir," said Philip, with a sudden calm and dignity that surprised, and almost awed his uncle. "My father, if the dead yet watch over the living, has seen and heard you. There will come a day for justice. Out of my path, hirelings!"

He waved his arm, and the menials shrank back at his tread, stalked across the inhospitable hall, and vanished.

When he had gained the street, he turned and looked

up at the house. His dark and hollow eyes, gleaming through the long and raven hair that fell profusely over his face, had in them an expression of menace almost preternatural, from its settled calmness; the wild and untutored majesty which, through rags and squalor, never deserted his form, as it never does the forms of men in whom the will is strong and the sense of injustice deep; the outstretched arm; the haggard, but noble features; the bloomless and scathed youth, — all gave to his features and his stature an aspect awful in its sinister and voiceless wrath. There he stood a moment, like one to whom woe and wrong have given a prophet's power, guiding the eye of the forgetful fate to the roof of the oppressor. Then, slowly, and with a half smile, he turned away, and strode through the streets till he arrived at one of the narrow lanes that intersect the more equivocal quarters of the huge city. He stopped at the private entrance of a small pawnbroker's shop; the door was opened by a slipshod boy; he ascended the dingy stairs till he came to the second floor; and there, in a small back room, he found Captain de Burgh Smith, seated before a table with a couple of candles on it, smoking a cigar, and playing at cards by himself.

"Well, what news of your brother, Bully Phil?"

"None: they will reveal nothing."

"Do you give him up?"

"Never! My hope now is in you."

"Well, I thought you would be driven to come to me, and I will do something for you that I should not loike to do for myself. I told you that I knew the Bow Street runner who was in the barouche. I will find him out, — Heaven knows that is easily done; and, if you can pay well, you will get your news."

"You shall have all I possess, if you restore my brother. See what it is, one hundred pounds,—it was his fortune. It is useless to me without him. There, take fifty now, and if —"

Philip stopped, for his voice trembled too much to allow him farther speech. Captain Smith thrust the notes into his pocket, and said, —

"We'll consider it settled."

Captain Smith fulfilled his promise. He saw the Bow Street officer. Mr. Sharp had been bribed too high by the opposite party to tell tales, and he willingly encouraged the suspicion that Sidney was under the care of the Beauforts. He promised, however, for the sake of ten guineas, to procure Philip a letter from Sidney himself. This was all he would undertake.

Philip was satisfied. At the end of another week Mr. Sharp transmitted to the captain a letter, which he, in his turn, gave to Philip. It ran thus, in Sidney's own sprawling hand: —

DEAR BROTHER PHILIP, — I am told you wish to know how I am, and therefore take up my pen, and assure you that I write all out of my own head. I am very Comfortable and happy, — much more so than I have been since poor dear mama died ; so I beg you won't vex yourself about me : and pray don't try and Find me out, For I would not go with you again for the world. I am so much better Off here. I wish you would be a good boy, and leave off your Bad ways; for I am sure, as every one says, I don't know what would have become of me if I had stayed with you. Mr. — [the Mr. half scratched out], the gentleman I am with, says if you turn out Properly, he will be a friend to *you*, Too ; but he advises you to go, like a Good boy, to Arthur Beaufort, and ask his pardon for the past, and then Arthur will be very kind to you. I send you a great Big sum of £20, and the gentleman says he would send more, only it might make you naughty, and set

up. I go to church now every Sunday, and read good books, and always pray that God may open your eyes. I have such a Nice pony, with such a long tale. So no more at present from your affectionate brother.

SIDNEY MORTON.

Oct. 8, 18—.

Pray, pray don't come after me Any more. You know I neerly died of it, but for this deir good gentleman I am with.

So this, then, was the crowning reward of all his sufferings and all his love. There was the letter, evidently undictated, with its errors of orthography, and in the child's rough scrawl; the serpent's tooth pierced to the heart, and left there its most lasting venom.

"I have done with him forever," said Philip, brushing away the bitter tears. "I will molest him no further; I care no more to pierce this mystery. Better for him as it is, — he is happy! Well, well, and I — *I* will never care for a human being again."

He bowed his head over his hands; and when he rose, his heart felt to him like stone. It seemed as if Conscience herself had fled from his soul on the wings of departed Love.

## CHAPTER XII.

But you have found the mountain's top, — there sit  
On the calm flourishing head of it ;  
And whilst with wearied steps we upward go,  
See Us and Clouds below.

COWLEY.

It was true that Sidney was happy in his new home, and thither we must now trace him.

On reaching the town where the travellers in the barouche had been requested to leave Sidney, "The King's Arms" was precisely the inn eschewed by Mr. Spencer. While the horses were being changed, he summoned the surgeon of the town to examine the child, who had already much recovered; and, by stripping his clothes, wrapping him in warm blankets, and administering cordials, he was permitted to reach another stage, so as to baffle pursuit that night; and in three days Mr. Spencer had placed his new charge with his maiden sisters, a hundred and fifty miles from the spot where he had been found. He would not take him to his own home yet. He feared the claims of Arthur Beaufort. He artfully wrote to that gentleman, stating that he had abandoned the chase of Sidney in despair, and desiring to know if he had discovered him; and a bribe of £300 to Mr. Sharp, with a candid exposition of his reasons for secreting Sidney, — reasons in which the worthy officer professed to sympathize, — secured the discretion of his ally. But he would not deny himself the pleasure of being in the same house with Sidney, and was therefore for some months the guest of his sisters. At length

he heard that young Beaufort had been ordered abroad for his health, and he then deemed it safe to transfer his new idol to his *Lares* by the lakes. During this interval, the current of the younger Morton's life had indeed flowed through flowers. At his age the cares of females were almost a want as well as a luxury, and the sisters spoiled and petted him as much as any elderly nymphs in Cytherea ever petted Cupid. They were good, excellent, high-nosed, flat-bosomed spinsters, sentimentally fond of their brother, whom they called "the poet," and dotingly attached to children. The cleanliness, the quiet, the good cheer of their neat abode, all tended to revive and invigorate the spirits of their young guest, and every one there seemed to vie which should love him the most. Still, his especial favorite was Mr. Spencer: for Spencer never went out without bringing back cakes and toys; and Spencer gave him his pony; and Spencer rode a little crop-eared nag by his side; and Spencer, in short, was associated with his every comfort and caprice. He told them his little history; and when he said how Philip had left him alone for long hours together, and how Philip had forced him to his last and nearly fatal journey, the old maids groaned, and the old bachelor sighed, and they all cried in a breath, that "Philip was a very wicked boy." It was not only their obvious policy to detach him from his brother, but it was their sincere conviction that they did right to do so. Sidney began, it is true, by taking Philip's part; but his mind was ductile, and he still looked back with a shudder to the hardships he had gone through. And so, by little and little, he learned to forget all the endearing and fostering love Philip had evinced to him; to connect his name with dark and mysterious fears; to repeat thanksgivings to



Providence that he was saved from him; and to hope that they might never meet again. In fact, when Mr. Spencer learned from Sharp that it was through Captain Smith, the swindler, that application had been made by Philip for news of his brother, and having also learned before, from the same person, that Philip had been implicated in the sale of a horse, swindled, if not stolen, — he saw every additional reason to widen the stream that flowed between the wolf and the lamb. The older Sidney grew, the better he comprehended and appreciated the motives of his protector, — for he was brought up in a formal school of propriety and ethics, and his mind naturally revolted from all images of violence or fraud. Mr. Spencer changed both the Christian and the surname of his *protégé*, in order to elude the search, whether of Philip, the Mortons, or the Beauforts, and Sidney passed for his nephew by a younger brother who had died in India.

So there, by the calm banks of the placid lake, amidst the fairest landscapes of the Island Garden, the youngest born of Catherine passed his tranquil days. The monotony of the retreat did not fatigue a spirit which, as he grew up, found occupation in books, music, poetry, and the elegances of the cultivated, if quiet life, within his reach. To the rough past he looked back as to an evil dream, in which the image of Philip stood dark and threatening. His brother's name, as he grew older, he rarely mentioned; and if he did volunteer it to Mr. Spencer, the bloom on his cheek grew paler. The sweetness of his manners, his fair face and winning smile, still continued to secure him love, and to screen from the common eye whatever of selfishness yet lurked in his nature. And, indeed, that fault, in so serene a career, and with friends so attached, was seldom called

into action. So thus was he severed from both the protectors, Arthur and Philip, to whom poor Catherine had bequeathed him.

By a perverse and strange mystery, they, to whom the charge was most intrusted, were the very persons who were forbidden to redeem it. On our deathbeds, when we think we have provided for those we leave behind, — should we lose the last smile that gilds the solemn agony, if we could look one year into the future?

Arthur Beaufort, after an ineffectual search for Sidney, heard, on returning to his home, no unexaggerated narrative of Philip's visit, and listened, with deep resentment, to his mother's distorted account of the language addressed to her. It is not surprising that, with all his romantic generosity, he felt sickened and revolted at violence that seemed to him without excuse. Though not a revengeful character, he had not that meekness which never resents. He looked upon Philip Morton as upon one rendered incorrigible by bad passions and evil company. Still, Catherine's last bequest, and Philip's note to him, the Unknown Comforter, often recurred to him, and he would have willingly yet aided had Philip been thrown in his way. But as it was, when he looked around, and saw the examples of that charity that begins at home, in which the world abounds, he felt as if he had done his duty; and prosperity having, though it could not harden his heart, still sapped the habits of perseverance, so by little and little the image of the dying Catherine, and the thought of her sons, faded from his remembrance. And for this there was the more excuse after the receipt of an anonymous letter, which relieved all his apprehensions on behalf of Sidney. The letter was short, and stated simply that Sidney Morton had found a friend who

would protect him throughout life, but who would not scruple to apply to Beaufort if ever he needed his assistance. So one son, and that the youngest and the best-loved, was safe. And the other, — had he not chosen his own career? Alas, poor Catherine! when you fancied that Philip was the one sure to force his way into fortune, and Sidney the one most helpless, how ill did you judge of the human heart! It was that very strength in Philip's nature which tempted the winds that scattered the blossoms, and shook the stem to its roots; while the lighter and frailer nature bent to the gale, and bore transplanting to a happier soil. If a parent read these pages, let him pause and think well on the characters of his children; let him at once fear and hope the most for the one whose passions and whose temper lead to a struggle with the world. That same world is a tough wrestler, and has a bear's gripe for the poor.

Meanwhile Arthur Beaufort's own complaints, which grew serious and menaced consumption, recalled his thoughts more and more every day to himself. He was compelled to abandon his career at the university, and to seek for health in the softer breezes of the South. His parents accompanied him to Nice; and when, at the end of a few months, he was restored to health, the desire of travel seized the mind and attracted the fancy of the young heir. His father and mother, satisfied with his recovery, and not unwilling that he should acquire the polish of Continental intercourse, returned to England; and young Beaufort, with gay companions and munificent income, already courted, spoiled, and flattered, commenced his tour with the fair climes of Italy.

So, O dark mystery of the Moral World! so, unlike

the order of the external universe, glide together, side by side, the shadowy steeds of NIGHT AND MORNING. Examine life in its own world; confound not *that* world, the inner one, the practical one, with the more visible, yet airier and less substantial system, doing homage to the sun, to whose throne, afar in the infinite space, the human heart has no wings to flee. In life, the mind and the circumstance give the true seasons, and regulate the darkness and the light. Of two men standing on the same foot of earth, the one revels in the joyous noon, the other shudders in the solitude of night. For hope and fortune the day-star is ever shining. For care and penury, Night changes not with the ticking of the clock, nor with the shadow on the dial. Morning for the heir, night for the houseless, and God's eye over both!

### BOOK III.

Berge lagen mir im Wege :  
Ströme hemmten meinen Fuß :  
Ueber Schlünde baut' ich Stege,  
Brücken durch den wilden Fluß.

SCHILLER: *Der Pilgrim.*



## BOOK III.

---

### CHAPTER I.

The knight of arts and industry,  
And his achievements fair.

THOMSON'S *Castle of Indolence*: explanatory verse to Canto II

IN a popular and respectable, but not very fashionable *quartier* in Paris, and in the tolerably broad and effective *locale* of the Rue —, there might be seen, at the time I now treat of, a curious-looking building, that jutted out semicircularly from the neighboring shops, with plaster pilasters and compo ornaments. The *virtuosi* of the *quartier* had discovered that the building was constructed in imitation of an ancient temple in Rome; this erection, then fresh and new, reached only to the *entresol*. The pilasters were painted light green and gilded in the cornices, while, surmounting the architrave, were three little statues, — one held a torch, another a bow, and a third a bag; they were therefore rumored, I know not with what justice, to be the artistical representatives of Hymen, Cupid, and Fortune.

On the door was neatly engraved, on a brass-plate, the following inscription: —

“MONSIEUR LOVE, ANGLAIS, A L'ENTRESOL.”

And if you had crossed the threshold and mounted the stairs, and gained that mysterious story inhabited by

Monsieur Love, you would have seen, upon another door to the right, another epigraph, informing those interested in the inquiry that the *bureau* of M. Love was open daily from nine in the morning to four in the afternoon.

The office of M. Love — for office it was, and of a nature not unfrequently designated in the "*petites affiches*" of Paris — had been established about six months; and whether it was the popularity of the profession, or the shape of the shop, or the manners of M. Love himself, I cannot pretend to say, but certain it is that the Temple of Hymen — as M. Love classically termed it — had become exceedingly in vogue in the Faubourg St. —. It was rumored that no less than nine marriages in the immediate neighborhood had been manufactured at this fortunate office, and that they had all turned out happily except one, in which the bride being sixty, and the bridegroom twenty-four, there had been rumors of domestic dissension; but as the lady had been delivered — I mean of her husband, who had drowned himself in the Seine — about a month after the ceremony, things had turned out in the long run better than might have been expected, and the widow was so little discouraged that she had been seen to enter the office already, — a circumstance that was greatly to the credit of Mr. Love.

Perhaps the secret of Mr. Love's success, and of the marked superiority of his establishment in rank and popularity over similar ones, consisted in the spirit and liberality with which the business was conducted. He seemed resolved to destroy all formality between parties who might desire to draw closer to each other, and he hit upon the lucky device of a *table d'hôte*, very well managed and held twice a week, and often followed by a



*soirée dansante* ; so that, if they pleased, the aspirants to matrimonial happiness might become acquainted without *gêne*. As he himself was a jolly, convivial fellow of much *savoir vivre*, it is astonishing how well he made these entertainments answer. Persons who had not seemed to take to each other in the first distant interview grew extremely enamored when the corks of the champagne — an extra of course in the *abonnement* — bounced against the wall. Added to this, Mr. Love took great pains to know the tradesmen in his neighborhood ; and, what with his jokes, his appearance of easy circumstances, and the fluency with which he spoke the language, he became a universal favorite. Many persons who were uncommonly starch in general, and who professed to ridicule the *bureau*, saw nothing improper in dining at the *table d'hôte*. To those who wished for secrecy, he was said to be wonderfully discreet ; but there were others who did not affect to conceal their discontent at the single state : for the rest, the entertainments were so contrived as never to shock the delicacy, while they always forwarded the suit.

It was about eight o'clock in the evening, and Mr. Love was still seated at dinner, or rather at dessert, with a party of guests. His apartments, though small, were somewhat gaudily painted and furnished, and his dining-room was decorated *à la Turque*. The party consisted, — first, of a rich *épicier*, a widower, Monsieur Goupille by name, an eminent man in the faubourg ; he was in his grand climacteric, but still *belhomme* ; wore a very well made *peruque* of light auburn, with tight pantaloons, which contained a pair of very respectable calves ; and his white neckcloth and his large frill were washed and got up with especial care. Next to Monsieur Goupille sat a very demure and very spare young lady of

about two-and-thirty, who was said to have saved a fortune — Heaven knows how — in the family of a rich English *milord*, where she had officiated as governess; she called herself Mademoiselle Adèle de Courval, and was very particular about the *de*, and very melancholy about her ancestors. Monsieur Goupille generally put his finger through his *peruque*, and fell away a little on his left pantaloons when he spoke to Mademoiselle de Courval, and Mademoiselle de Courval generally pecked at her bouquet when she answered Monsieur Goupille. On the other side of this young lady sat a fine-looking fair man, — M. Sovolofski, a Pole, buttoned up to the chin, and rather threadbare, though uncommonly neat. He was flanked by a little fat lady who had been very pretty, and who kept a boarding-house, or *pension*, for the English, she herself being English, though long established in Paris. Rumor said she had been gay in her youth, and dropped in Paris by a Russian nobleman, with a very pretty settlement, — she and the settlement having equally expanded by time and season: she was called Madame Beavor. On the other side of the table was a red-headed Englishman, who spoke very little French; who had been told that French ladies were passionately fond of light hair; and who, having £2000 of his own, intended to quadruple that sum by a prudent marriage. Nobody knew what his family was, but his name was Higgins. His neighbor was an exceedingly tall, large-boned Frenchman, with a long nose and a red ribbon, who was much seen at Frascati's, and had served under Napoleon. Then came another lady, extremely pretty, very *piquante*, and very gay, but past the *première jeunesse*, who ogled Mr. Love more than she did any of his guests: she was called Rosalie Caumartin, and was at the head of a large *bon-bon* establishment; mar-

ried, but her husband had gone four years ago to the Isle of France, and she was a little doubtful whether she might not be justly entitled to the privileges of a widow. Next to Mr. Love, in the place of honor, sat no less a person than the Vicomte de Vaudemont, a French gentleman, really well-born, but whose various excesses, added to his poverty, had not served to sustain that respect for his birth which he considered due to it. He had already been twice married: once to an Englishwoman, who had been decoyed by the title; by this lady, who died in childbed, he had one son, — a fact which he sedulously concealed from the world of Paris by keeping the unhappy boy — who was now some eighteen or nineteen years old — a perpetual exile in England. Monsieur de Vaudemont did not wish to pass for more than thirty, and he considered that to produce a son of eighteen would be to make the lad a monster of ingratitude by giving the lie every hour to his own father! In spite of this precaution, the vicomte found great difficulty in getting a third wife, — especially as he had no actual and visible income; was, not seamed, but ploughed up, with the small-pox; small of stature, and was considered more than *un peu bête*. He was, however, a prodigious dandy, and wore a lace frill and embroidered waistcoat. Mr. Love's *vis-à-vis* was Mr. Birnie, an Englishman, a sort of assistant in the establishment, with a hard, dry, parchment face, and — a remarkable talent for silence. The host himself was a splendid animal: his vast chest seemed to occupy more space at the table than any four of his guests, yet he was not corpulent or unwieldy; he was dressed in black, wore a velvet stock very high, and four gold studs glittered in his shirt front; he was bald to the crown, which made his forehead appear singularly lofty, and what hair he had left was a little grayish and curled;

his face was shaved smoothly, except a close-clipped mustache; and his eyes, though small, were bright and piercing. Such was the party.

"These are the best *bons-bons* I ever ate," said Mr. Love, glancing at Madame Caumartin. "My fair friends have compassion on the table of a poor bachelor."

"But you ought not to be a bachelor, Monsieur Lofe," replied the fair Rosalie, with an arch look; "you who make others marry, should set the example."

"All in good time," answered Mr. Love, nodding; "one serves one's customers to so much happiness that one has none left for one's self."

Here a loud explosion was heard. Monsieur Goupille had pulled one of the *bon-bon* crackers with Mademoiselle Adèle.

"I've got the motto! — no, monsieur has it: I'm always unlucky," said the gentle Adèle.

The *épicier* solemnly unrolled the little slip of paper; the print was very small, and he longed to take out his spectacles, but he thought that would make him look old. However, he spelled through the motto with some difficulty : —

"Comme elle fait soumettre un cœur,  
En refusant son doux hommage,  
On peut traiter la coquette en vainqueur :  
De la beauté modeste on chérit l'esclavage."<sup>1</sup>

"I present it to mademoiselle," said he, laying the motto solemnly in Adèle's plate, upon a little mountain of chestnut husks.

"It is very pretty," said she, looking down.

<sup>1</sup> The coquette who subjugates a heart, yet refuses its tender homage, one may treat as a conqueror; of modest beauty we cherish the slavery.

"It is very *à propos*," whispered the *épicier*, caressing the *peruque* a little too roughly in his emotion. Mr. Love gave him a kick under the table, and put his finger to his own bald head, and then to his nose significantly. The intelligent *épicier* smoothed back the irritated *peruque*.

"Are you fond of *bons-bons*, Mademoiselle Adèle? I have a very fine stock at home," said Monsieur Goupille.

Mademoiselle Adèle de Courval sighed, "*Hélas!* they remind me of happier days, when I was a *petite*, and my dear grandmamma took me in her lap, and told me how she escaped the guillotine: she was an *émigrée*, and you know her father was a marquis."

The *épicier* bowed and looked puzzled. He did not quite see the connection between the *bons-bons* and the guillotine.

"You are *triste*, monsieur," observed Madame Beavor, in rather a piqued tone, to the Pole, who had not said a word since the *rôti*.

"Madame, an exile is always *triste*: I think of my *pauvre pays*."

"Bah!" cried Mr. Love. "Think that there is no exile by the side of a *belle dame*."

The Pole smiled mournfully.

"Pull it," said Madame Beavor, holding a cracker to the patriot, and turning away her face.

"Yes, madame; I wish it were a cannon in defence of *La Pologne*."

With this magniloquent aspiration, the gallant Sovolofski pulled lustily, and then rubbed his fingers, with a little grimace, observing that crackers were sometimes dangerous, and that the present combustible was *d'une force immense*.

"Hélas ! J'ai cru jusqu'à ce jour  
Pouvoir triompher de l'amour,"<sup>1</sup>

said Madame Beavor, reading the motto. "What do you say to that?"

"Madame, there is no triumph for *La Pologne*!"

Madame Beavor uttered a little peevish exclamation, and glanced in despair at her red-headed countryman. "Are you, too, a great politician, sir?" said she, in English.

"No, mem! — I'm all for the ladies."

"What does he say?" asked Madame Caumartin.

"Monsieur Higgins est tout pour les dames."

"To be sure he is," cried Mr. Love; "all the English are, especially with that colored hair: a lady who likes a passionate adorer should always marry a man with gold-colored hair, — always. What do *you* say, Mademoiselle Adèle?"

"Oh, I like fair hair," said mademoiselle, looking bashfully askew at Monsieur Goupille's *peruque*. "Grandmamma said her papa — the marquis — used yellow powder: it must have been very pretty."

"Rather à la *sucre d'orge*," remarked the *épicier*, smiling on the right side of his mouth, where his best teeth were.

Mademoiselle de Courval looked displeased. "I fear you are a republican, Monsieur Goupille?"

"I, mademoiselle? No; I'm for the Restoration;" and again the *épicier* perplexed himself to discover the association of idea between republicanism and *sucre d'orge*.

"Another glass of wine. Come, another," said Mr. Love, stretching across the vicomte to help Madame Caumartin.

<sup>1</sup> Alas! I believed until to-day that I could triumph over love.

"Sir," said the tall Frenchman with the ribbon, eying the *épicier* with great disdain, "you say you are for the Restoration: I am for the Empire, — *moi!*"

"No politics!" cried Mr. Love. "Let us adjourn to the *salon*."

The vicomte, who had seemed supremely *ennuyé* during this dialogue, plucked Mr. Love by the sleeve as he rose, and whispered petulantly, "I do not see any one here to suit me, Monsieur Love, — none of my rank."

"*Mon Dieu!*" answered Mr. Love; "*point d'argent point de Suisse*. I could introduce you to a duchess; but then the fee is high. There's Mademoiselle de Courval, — she dates from the Carlovingians."

"She is very like a boiled sole," answered the vicomte, with a wry face. "Still, — what dower *has* she?"

"Forty thousand francs, and sickly," replied Mr. Love; "but she likes a tall man, and Monsieur Goupille is —"

"Tall men are never well made," interrupted the vicomte, angrily; and he drew himself aside as Mr. Love, gallantly advancing, gave his arm to Madame Beavor, because the Pole had, in rising, folded both his own arms across his breast.

"Excuse me, ma'am," said Mr. Love to Madame Beavor, as they adjourned to the *salon*, "I don't think you manage that brave man well."

"*Ma foi, comme il est ennuyeux avec sa Pologne,*" replied Madame Beavor, shrugging her shoulders.

"True; but he is a very fine-shaped man; and it is a comfort to think that one will have no rival but his country. Trust me, and encourage him a little more; I think he would suit you to a T."

Here the attendant engaged for the evening announced Monsieur and Madame Giraud; whereupon there entered a little, little couple, — very fair, very plump, and very like each other. This was Mr. Love's show couple, his decoy ducks, his last best example of match-making; they had been married two months out of the *bureau*, and were the admiration of the neighborhood for their conjugal affection. As they were now united, they had ceased to frequent the *table d'hôte*; but Mr. Love often invited them after the dessert, *pour encourager les autres*.

"My *dear* friends," cried Mr. Love, shaking each by the hand, "I am ravished to see you. Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you Monsieur and Madame Giraud, the happiest couple in Christendom: if I had done nothing else in my life but bring them together, I should not have lived in vain!"

The company eyed the objects of this eulogium with great attention.

"Monsieur, my prayer is to deserve my *bonheur*," said Monsieur Giraud.

"*Cher ange!*" murmured madame: and the happy pair seated themselves next to each other.

Mr. Love, who was all for those innocent pastimes which do away with conventional formality and reserve, now proposed a game at "Hunt the Slipper," which was welcomed by the whole party, except the Pole and the vicomte: though Mademoiselle Adèle looked prudish, and observed to the *épiciér* that "Monsieur Love was so droll, but she should not have liked her *pauvre grand-maman* to see her."

The vicomte had stationed himself opposite to Mademoiselle de Courval, and kept his eyes fixed on her very tenderly.



"Mademoiselle, I see, does not approve of such *bourgeois* diversions," said he,

"No, monsieur," said the gentle Adèle; "but I think we must sacrifice our own tastes to those of the company."

"It is a very amiable sentiment," said the *épicier*.

"It is one attributed to grandmamma's papa, the Marquis de Courval. It has become quite a hackneyed remark since," said Adèle.

"Come, ladies," said the joyous Rosalie; "I volunteer my slipper."

"Asseyez-vous donc," said Madame Beavor to the Pole. "Have you no games of this sort in Poland?"

"Madame, *La Pologne* is no more," said the Pole. "But with the swords of her brave —"

"No swords here, if you please," said Mr. Love, putting his vast hands on the Pole's shoulders, and sinking him forcibly down into the circle now formed.

The game proceeded with great vigor and much laughter from Rosalie, Mr. Love, and Madame Beavor, especially whenever the last thumped the Pole with the heel of the slipper. Monsieur Giraud was always sure that Madame Giraud had the slipper about her, which persuasion on his part gave rise to many little endearments, which are always so innocent among married people. The vicomte and the *épicier* were equally certain the slipper was with Mademoiselle Adèle, who defended herself with much more energy than might have been supposed in one so gentle. The *épicier*, however, grew jealous of the attentions of his noble rival, and told him that he *géné'd* mademoiselle: whereupon the vicomte called him an *impertinent*; and the tall Frenchman with the red ribbon sprang up, and said, —

"Can I be of any assistance, gentlemen?"

Therewith Mr. Love, the great peacemaker, interposed, and, reconciling the rivals, proposed to change the game to *Colin Maillard, Anglicè*, "Blind Man's Buff." Rosalie clapped her hands, and offered herself to be blindfolded. The tables and chairs were cleared away; and Madame Beavor pushed the Pole into Rosalie's arms, who, having felt him about the face for some moments, guessed him to be the tall Frenchman. During this time, Monsieur and Madame Giraud hid themselves behind the window-curtain.

"Amuse yourself, *mon ami*," said Madame Beavor to the liberated Pole.

"Ah, madame," sighed Monsieur Sovolofski, "how can I be gay? All my property confiscated by the Emperor of Russia! Has *La Pologne* no Brutus?"

"I think you are in love," said the host, clapping him on the back.

"Are you *quite* sure," whispered the Pole to the match-maker, "that Madame Beavor has *vingt mille livres de rentes*?"

"Not a *sou* less."

The Pole mused, and, glancing at Madame Beavor, said, "And yet, madame, your charming gayety consoles me amidst all my sufferings;" upon which Madame Beavor called him "flatterer," and rapped his knuckles with her fan; the latter proceeding the brave Pole did not seem to like, for he immediately buried his hands in his trousers-pockets.

The game was now at its meridian. Rosalie was uncommonly active, and flew about here and there, much to the harassment of the Pole, who repeatedly wiped his forehead, and observed that it was warm work, and put him in mind of the last sad battle for *La Pologne*. Monsieur Goupille, who had lately taken

lessons in dancing, and was vain of his agility, mounted the chairs and tables, as Rosalie approached, with great grace and gravity. It so happened that in these saltations he ascended a stool near the curtain behind which Monsieur and Madame Giraud were ensconced. Somewhat agitated by a slight flutter behind the folds, which made him fancy, on the sudden panic, that Rosalie was creeping that way, the *épicier* made an abrupt *pirouette*, and the hook on which the curtains were suspended caught his left coat-tail, —

“The fatal vesture left the unguarded side :”

just as he turned to extricate the garment from that dilemma, Rosalie sprung upon him, and naturally lifting her hands to that height where she fancied the human face divine, took another extremity of Monsieur Goupille’s graceful frame, thus exposed by surprise.

“I don’t know who this is. *Quelle drôle de visage!*” muttered Rosalie.

“*Mais*, madame,” faltered Monsieur Goupille, looking greatly disconcerted.

The gentle Adèle, who did not seem to relish this adventure, came to the relief of her wooer, and pinched Rosalie very sharply in the arm.

“That’s not fair. But I will know who this is,” cried Rosalie, angrily; “you sha’n’t escape!”

A sudden and universal burst of laughter roused her suspicions; she drew back, —and exclaiming, “*Mais, quelle mauvaise plaisanterie; c’est trop fort!*” applied her fair hand to the place in dispute with so hearty a goodwill, that Monsieur Goupille uttered a dolorous cry, and sprung from the chair, leaving the coat-tail (the cause of all his woe) suspended upon the hook.

It was just at this moment, and in the midst of the

excitement caused by Monsieur Goupille's misfortune, that the door opened, and the attendant reappeared, followed by a young man in a large cloak.

The new-comer paused at the threshold, and gazed around him in evident surprise.

"*Diable !*" said Mr. Love, approaching, and gazing hard at the stranger. "Is it possible? You are come at last! Welcome!"

"But," said the stranger, apparently still bewildered, "there is some mistake; you are not —"

"Yes; I am Mr. Love! — Love all the world over. How is our friend Gregg? — told you to address yourself to Mr. Love, eh? — Mum! Ladies and gentlemen, an acquisition to our party. Fine fellow — eh? Five feet eleven without his shoes, — and young enough to hope to be thrice married before he dies. When did you arrive?"

"To-day."

And thus Philip Morton and Mr. William Gawtreys met once more.

## CHAPTER II.

Happy the man who, void of care and strife,  
In silken or in leathern purse retains  
A splendid shilling!

*The Splendid Shilling.*

And wherefore should they take or care for thought,  
The unreasoning vulgar willingly obey,  
And, leaving toil and poverty behind,  
Run forth by different ways, the blissful boon to find.

*WEST'S Education.*

"POOR boy! your story interests me. The events are romantic, but the moral is practical, old, everlasting, — life, boy, life. Poverty by itself is no such great curse; that is, if it stops short of starving. And passion by itself is a noble thing, sir; but poverty and passion together, poverty and feeling, poverty and pride, the poverty one is not born to, but falls into; and the man who ousts you out of your easy-chair, kicking you with every turn he takes, as he settles himself more comfortably: why there's no romance in that, — hard every-day life, sir! Well, well. So, after your brother's letter, you resigned yourself to that fellow Smith?"

"No; I gave him my money, not my soul. I turned from his door, with a few shillings that he himself thrust into my hand, and walked on, — I cared not whither: out of the town, into the fields, — till night came; and then, just as I suddenly entered on the high-road, many miles away, the moon rose, and I saw by the hedge-side, something that seemed like a corpse. It was an old beggar, in the last state of raggedness, disease, and

famine. He had lain himself down to die. I shared with him what I had, and helped him to a little inn. As he crossed the threshold, he turned round and blessed me. Do you know, the moment I heard that blessing, a stone seemed rolled away from my heart. I said to myself, 'What then! even *I* can be of use to some one; and I am better off than that old man, for I have youth and health.' As these thoughts stirred in me, my limbs, before heavy with fatigue, grew light; a strange kind of excitement seized me. I ran on gayly beneath the moonlight that smiled over the crisp broad road. I felt as if no house, not even a palace, were large enough for me that night. And when, at last, wearied out, I crept into a wood, and laid myself down to sleep, I still murmured to myself, 'I have youth and health.' But in the morning, when I rose, I stretched out my arms, and missed my brother! . . . In two or three days I found employment with a farmer; but we quarrelled after a few weeks; for once he wished to strike me: and, somehow or other, I could work but not serve. Winter had begun when we parted. Oh, such a winter! Then — then I knew what it was to be houseless. How I lived for some months, — if to live it can be called, — it would pain you to hear, and humble me to tell. At last I found myself again in London; and one evening, not many days since, I resolved at last — for nothing else seemed left, and I had not touched food for two days — to come to you."

"And why did that never occur to you before?"

"Because," said Philip, with a deep blush, — "because I trembled at the power over my actions and my future life that I was to give to one whom I was to bless as a benefactor, yet distrust as a guide."

"Well," said Love, or Gawtrey, with a singular mix-

ture of irony and compassion in his voice; "and it was hunger, then, that terrified you at last even more than I?"

"Perhaps hunger, — or perhaps rather the reasoning that comes from hunger. I had not, I say, touched food for two days; and I was standing on that bridge, from which on one side you see the palace of a head of the Church, on the other the towers of the Abbey, within which the men I have read of in history lie buried. It was a cold frosty evening, and the river below looked bright with the lamps and stars. I leaned, weak and sickening, against the wall of the bridge; and in one of the arched recesses beside me a cripple held out his hat for pence. I envied him! — he had a livelihood; he was inured to it, perhaps bred to it: he had no shame. By a sudden impulse, I too turned abruptly round, held out my hand to the first passenger, and started at the shrillness of my own voice, as it cried, 'Charity.'"

Gawtrety threw another log on the fire, looked complacently round the comfortable room, and rubbed his hands. The young man continued, —

"'You should be ashamed of yourself. — I've a great mind to give you to the police,' was the answer, in a pert and sharp tone. I looked up, and saw the livery my father's menials had worn. I had been begging my bread from Robert Beaufort's lackey! I said nothing; the man went on his business on tiptoe, that the mud might not splash above the soles of his shoes. Then thoughts so black that they seemed to blot out every star from the sky — thoughts I had often wrestled against, but to which I now gave myself up with a sort of mad joy — seized me: and I remembered you. I had still preserved the address you gave me; I went straight to the house. Your friend, on naming you, received

me kindly, and without question placed food before me, pressed on me clothing and money, procured me a passport, gave me your address, — and now I am beneath your roof. Gawtreys, I know nothing yet of the world, but the dark side of it. I know not what to deem you; but as you alone have been kind to me, so it is to your kindness rather than your aid that I now cling: your kind words and kind looks; yet — ” he stopped short, and breathed hard.

“ Yet you would know more of me. Faith, my boy, I cannot tell you more at this moment. I believe, to speak fairly, I don't live exactly within the pale of the law. But I'm not a villain! I never plundered my friend and called it play! — I never murdered my friend and called it honor! — I never seduced my friend's wife and called it gallantry! ” As Gawtreys said this, he drew the words out, one by one, through his grinded teeth, paused, and resumed more gayly, “ I struggle with fortune; *voilà tout!* I am not what you seem to suppose, — not exactly a swindler, certainly not a robber! But, as I before told you, I am a charlatan; so is every man who strives to be richer or greater than he is. I, too, want kindness as much as you do. My bread and my cup are at your service. I will try and keep you unsullied, even by the clean dirt that now and then sticks to me. On the other hand, youth, my young friend, has no right to play the censor; and you must take me as you take the world, without being over-scrupulous and dainty. My present vocation pays well; in fact, I am beginning to lay by. My real name and past life are thoroughly unknown, and as yet unsuspected in this *quartier*; for though I have seen much of Paris, my career hitherto has passed in other parts of the city: and for the rest, own that I am well disguised!



What a benevolent air this bald forehead gives me, — eh? True,” added Gawtrey, somewhat more seriously, “if I saw how you could support yourself in a broader path of life than that in which I pick out my own way, I might say to you, as a gay man of fashion might say to some sober stripling, — nay, as many a dissolute father says (or ought to say) to his son, ‘It is no reason you should be a sinner, because I am not a saint.’ In a word, if you were well off in a respectable profession, you might have safer acquaintances than myself. But as it is, upon my word as a plain man, I don’t see what you can do better.” Gawtrey made this speech with so much frankness and ease that it seemed greatly to relieve the listener, and when he wound up with, “What say you? In fine, my life is that of a great schoolboy, getting into scrapes for the fun of it, and fighting his way out as he best can! Will you see how you like it?” — Philip, with a confiding and grateful impulse, put his hand into Gawtrey’s. The host shook it cordially, and, without saying another word, showed his guest into a little cabinet where there was a sofa-bed, and they parted for the night.

The new life upon which Philip Morton entered was so odd, so grotesque, and so amusing, that at his age it was, perhaps, natural that he should not be clear-sighted as to its danger.

William Gawtrey was one of those men who are born to exert a certain influence and ascendancy wherever they may be thrown; his vast strength, his redundant health, had a power of themselves, — a moral as well as physical power. He naturally possessed high animal spirits, beneath the surface of which, however, at times, there was visible a certain under-current of malignity and scorn. He had evidently received a superior education, and

could command at will the manners of a man not unfamiliar with a politer class of society. From the first hour that Philip had seen him on the top of the coach on the R—— road, this man had attracted his curiosity and interest; the conversation he had heard in the churchyard, the obligations he owed to Gawtrety in his escape from the officers of justice, the time afterwards passed in his society till they separated at the little inn, the rough and hearty kindliness Gawtrety had shown him at that period, and the hospitality extended to him now, — all contributed to excite his fancy, and in much, indeed, very much, entitled this singular person to his gratitude. Morton, in a word, was fascinated; this man was the only friend he had made. I have not thought it necessary to detail to the reader the conversations that had taken place between them, during that passage of Morton's life when he was before for some days Gawtrety's companion; yet those conversations had sunk deep in his mind. He was struck, and almost awed, by the profound gloom which lurked under Gawtrety's broad humor, — a gloom, not of temperament, but of knowledge. His views of life, of human justice and human virtue were (as, to be sure, is commonly the case with men who have had reason to quarrel with the world) dreary and despairing; and Morton's own experience had been so sad that these opinions were more influential than they could ever have been with the happy. However, in this, their second re-union, there was a greater gayety than in their first: and under his host's roof Morton insensibly, but rapidly, recovered something of the early and natural tone of his impetuous and ardent spirits. Gawtrety himself was generally a boon companion; their society, if not select, was merry. When their evenings were disengaged, Gawtrety was fond

of haunting *cafés* and theatres, and Morton was his companion; Birnie (Mr. Gawtreys partner) never accompanied them. Refreshed by this change of life, the very person of this young man regained its bloom and vigor, as a plant, removed from some choked atmosphere and unwholesome soil, where it had struggled for light and air, expands on transplanting; the graceful leaves burst from the long-drooping boughs, and the elastic crest springs upward to the sun in the glory of its young prime. If there was still a certain fiery sternness in his aspect, it had ceased, at least, to be haggard and savage; it even suited the character of his dark and expressive features. He might not have lost the something of the tiger in his fierce temper, but, in the sleek hues and the sinewy symmetry of the frame, he began to put forth also something of the tiger's beauty.

Mr. Birnie did not sleep in the house, he went home nightly to a lodging at some little distance. We have said but little about this man; for, to all appearance, there was little enough to say: he rarely opened his own mouth except to Gawtreys, with whom Philip often observed him engaged in whispered conferences, to which he was not admitted. His eye, however, was less idle than his lips: it was not a bright eye; on the contrary, it was dull, and, to the unobservant, lifeless, of a pale blue, with a dim film over it, — the eye of a vulture; but it had in it a calm, heavy, stealthy watchfulness, which inspired Morton with great distrust and aversion. Mr. Birnie not only spoke French like a native, but all his habits, his gestures, his tricks of manner, were French; not the French of good society, but more idiomatic, as it were, and popular. He was not exactly a vulgar person, — he was too silent for that, — but he was evidently of low extraction and coarse breeding; his

accomplishments were of a mechanical nature; he was an extraordinary arithmetician; he was a very skilful chemist, and kept a laboratory at his lodgings; he mended his own clothes and linen with incomparable neatness. Philip suspected him of blacking his own shoes, but that was prejudice. Once he found Morton sketching horses' heads, — *pour se désennuyer*; and he made some short criticisms on the drawings, which showed him well acquainted with the art. Philip, surprised, sought to draw him into conversation; but Birnie eluded the attempt, and observed that he had once been an engraver.

Gawtrey himself did not seem to know much of the early life of this person, or at least he did not seem to like much to talk of him. The footstep of Mr. Birnie was gliding, noiseless, and catlike; he had no sociality in him, enjoyed nothing, drank hard, — but was never drunk. Somehow or other, he had evidently over Gawtrey an influence little less than that which Gawtrey had over Morton, but it was of a different nature: Morton had conceived an extraordinary affection for his friend, while Gawtrey seemed secretly to dislike Birnie, and to be glad whenever he quitted his presence. It was, in truth, Gawtrey's custom, when Birnie retired for the night, to rub his hands, bring out the punch-bowl, squeeze the lemons, and while Philip, stretched on the sofa, listened to him, between sleep and waking, to talk on for the hour together, often till daybreak, with that *bizarre* mixture of knavery and feeling, drollery and sentiment, which made the dangerous charm of his society.

One evening as they thus sat together, Morton, after listening for some time to his companion's comments on men and things, said abruptly, —

“Gawtrey! there is so much in you that puzzles me,

so much which I find it difficult to reconcile with your present pursuits, that, if I ask no indiscreet confidence, I should like greatly to hear some account of your early life. It would please me to compare it with my own! when I am your age, I will then look back and see what I owed to your example."

"My early life! well, — you shall hear it. It will put you on your guard, I hope, betimes, against the two rocks of youth, — love and friendship." Then, while squeezing the lemon into his favorite beverage, which Morton observed he made stronger than usual, Gawtreys thus commenced

THE HISTORY OF A GOOD-FOR-NOTHING.

## CHAPTER III.

All his success must on himself depend,  
He had no money, counsel, guide, or friend ;  
With spirit high, John learned the world to brave,  
And in both senses was a ready knave.

CRABBE.

“ My grandfather sold walking-sticks and umbrellas in the little passage by Exeter 'Change ; he was a man of genius and speculation. As soon as he had scraped together a little money, he lent it to some poor devil with a hard landlord, at twenty per cent, and made him take half the loan in umbrellas or bamboos. By these means he got his foot into the ladder, and climbed upward and upward, till, at the age of forty, he had amassed £5000. He then looked about for a wife. An honest trader in the Strand, who dealt largely in cotton prints, possessed an only daughter ; this young lady had a legacy from a great aunt of £3220, with a small street in St. Giles's, where the tenants paid weekly (all thieves or rogues, — all, so their rents were sure). Now, my grandfather conceived a great friendship for the father of this young lady, gave him a hint as to a new pattern in spotted cottons, enticed him to take out a patent, and lent him £700 for the speculation, applied for the money at the very moment cottons were at their worst, and got the daughter instead of the money, — by which exchange, you see, he won £2520 to say nothing of the young lady. My grandfather then entered into partnership with the worthy trader, carried on the patent with spirit, and

begat two sons. As he grew older, ambition seized him; his sons should be gentlemen, — one was sent to college, the other put into a marching regiment. My grandfather meant to die worth a plum; but a fever he caught in visiting his tenants in St. Giles's prevented him, and he only left £20,000, equally divided between the sons. My father, the college-man" (here Gawtreys paused a moment, took a large draught of the punch, and resumed with a visible effort) — "my father, the college-man, was a person of rigid principles, bore an excellent character, had a great regard for the world. He married early and respectably. I am the sole fruit of that union; he lived soberly, his temper was harsh and morose, his home gloomy; he was a very severe father, and my mother died before I was ten years old. When I was fourteen, a little old Frenchman came to lodge with us; he had been persecuted under the old *régime* for being a philosopher; he filled my head with odd crotchets, which, more or less, have stuck there ever since. At eighteen I was sent to St. John's College, Cambridge. My father was rich enough to have let me go up in the higher rank of a pensioner, but he had lately grown avaricious; he thought that I was extravagant; he made me a sizar, perhaps to spite me. Then, for the first time, those inequalities in life which the Frenchman had dinned into my ears met me practically. A sizar! another name for a dog! I had such strength, health, and spirits, that I had more life in my little finger than half the fellow-commoners — genteel, spindle-shanked striplings, who might have passed for a collection of my grandfather's walking-canes — had in their whole bodies. And I often think," continued Gawtreys, "that health and spirits have a great deal to answer for! When we are young, we so far resemble savages — who are nature's

young people — that we attach prodigious value to physical advantages. My feats of strength and activity, — the clods I thrashed, and the railings I leaped, and the boat-races I won, — are they not written in the chronicle of St. John's? These achievements inspired me with an extravagant sense of my own superiority; I could not but despise the rich fellows whom I could have blown down with a sneeze. Nevertheless, there was an impassable barrier between me and them, — a sizar was not a proper associate for the favorites of fortune! But there was one young man, a year younger than myself, of high birth, and the heir to considerable wealth, who did not regard me with the same supercilious insolence as the rest; his very rank, perhaps, made him indifferent to the little conventional formalities which influence persons who cannot play at football with this round world; he was the wildest youngster in the university: lamp-breaker, tandem-driver, mob-fighter, — a very devil, in short; clever, but not in the reading line; small and slight, but brave as a lion. Congenial habits made us intimate, and I loved him like a brother: better than a brother, — as a dog loves his master. In all our rows I covered him with my body. He had but to say to me, 'Leap into the water,' and I would not have stopped to pull off my coat. In short, I loved him as a proud man loves one who stands betwixt him and contempt, — as an affectionate man loves one who stands between him and solitude. To cut short a long story: my friend, one dark night, committed an outrage against discipline of the most unpardonable character. There was a sanctimonious, grave old fellow of the college crawling home from a tea-party; my friend and another of his set seized, blindfolded, and handcuffed this poor wretch, carried him *vi et armis*, back to the house of an old maid whom



he had been courting for the last ten years, fastened his pigtail (he wore a long one) to the knocker, and so left him. You may imagine the infernal hubbub which his attempts to extricate himself caused in the whole street; the old maid's old maid-servant, after emptying on his head all the vessels of wrath she could lay her hand to, screamed 'Rape and murder!' The proctor and his bull-dogs came up, released the prisoner, and gave chase to the delinquents, who had incautiously remained near to enjoy the sport. The night was dark, and they reached the college in safety; but they had been tracked to the gates. For this offence *I* was expelled."

"Why, you were not concerned in it?" said Philip.

"No; but I was suspected and accused. I could have got off by betraying the true culprits, but my friend's father was in public life: a stern, haughty, old statesman; my friend was mortally afraid of him,—the only person he *was* afraid of. If I had too much insisted on my innocence, I might have set inquiry on the right track. In fine, I was happy to prove my friendship for him. He shook me most tenderly by the hand on parting, and promised never to forget my generous devotion. I went home in disgrace: I need not tell you what *my* father said to me; I do not think he ever loved me from that hour. Shortly after this, my uncle, George Gawtre, the captain, returned from abroad; he took a great fancy to me, and I left my father's house (which had grown insufferable) to live with him. He had been a very handsome man,—a gay spendthrift; he had got through his fortune, and now lived on his wits,—he was a professed gambler. His easy temper, his lively humor, fascinated me; he knew the world well, and, like all gamblers, was generous when the dice were lucky,—which, to tell you the truth, they generally were, with a

man who had no scruples. Though his practices were a little suspected, they had never been discovered. We lived in an elegant apartment, mixed familiarly with men of various ranks, and enjoyed life extremely. I brushed off my college rust, and conceived a taste for expense. I knew not why it was, but in my new existence every one was kind to me; and I had spirits that made me welcome everywhere. I was a scamp,—but a frolicsome scamp, and that is always a popular character. As yet I was not dishonest, but saw dishonesty round me, and it seemed a very pleasant, jolly mode of making money; and now I again fell into contact with the young heir. My college friend was as wild in London as he had been at Cambridge; but the boy-ruffian, though not then twenty years of age, had grown into the man-villain.”

Here Gawtreys paused, and frowned darkly.

“He had great natural parts, this young man; much wit, readiness, and cunning, and he became very intimate with my uncle. He learned of him how to play the dice, and to pack the cards,—he paid him £1000 for the knowledge!”

“How! a cheat? You said he was rich.”

“His father was very rich, and he had a liberal allowance, but he was very extravagant; and rich men love gain as well as poor men do! He had no excuse but the grand excuse of all vice, — SELFISHNESS. Young as he was, he became the fashion, and he fattened upon the plunder of his equals, who desired the honor of his acquaintance. Now, I had seen my uncle cheat, but I had never imitated his example: when the man of fashion cheated, and made a jest of his earnings and my scruples; when I saw him courted, flattered, honored, and his acts unsuspected, because his connections embraced half

the peerage,—the temptation grew strong, but I still resisted it. However, my father always said I was born to be a good-for-nothing, and I could not escape my destiny. And now I suddenly fell in love,—you don't know what that is yet: so much the better for you. The girl was beautiful, and I thought she loved me,—perhaps she did; but I was too poor, so her friends said, for marriage. We courted, as the saying is, in the meanwhile. It was my love for her, my wish to deserve her, that made me iron against my friend's example. I was fool enough to speak to him of Mary,—to present him to her; this ended in her seduction." (Again Gawtreay paused, and breathed hard.) "I discovered the treachery,—I called out the seducer; he sneered, and refused to fight the low-born adventurer. I struck him to the earth,—and *then* we fought; I was satisfied by a ball through my side; but *he*," added Gawtreay, rubbing his hands, and with a vindictive chuckle,—"he was a cripple for life! When I recovered, I found that my foe, whose sick-chamber was crowded with friends and comforters, had taken advantage of my illness to ruin my reputation. He, the swindler, accused me of his own crime; the equivocal character of my uncle confirmed the charge. *Him*, his own high-born pupil was enabled to unmask, and his disgrace was visited on me. I left my bed to find my uncle (all disguise over) an avowed partner in a hell; and myself, blasted alike in name, love, past, and future. And then, Philip, then I commenced that career which I have trodden since,—the prince of good-fellows and good-for-nothings, with ten thousand aliases, and as many strings to my bow. Society cast me off when I was innocent. Egad, I have had my revenge on society since! — Ho! ho! ho!"

The laugh of this man had in it a moral infection. There was a sort of glorying in its deep tone; it was not the hollow hysteric of shame and despair,—it spoke a sanguine joyousness! William Gawtreay was a man whose animal constitution had led him to take animal pleasure in all things; he had enjoyed the poisons he had lived on.

“But your father,—surely your father—”

“My father,” interrupted Gawtreay, “refused me the money (but a small sum) that, once struck with the strong impulse of a sincere penitence, I begged of him, to enable me to get an honest living in an humble trade. His refusal soured the penitence; it gave me an excuse for my career,—and conscience grapples to an excuse as a drowning wretch to a straw. And yet this hard father,—this cautious, moral, money-loving man,—three months afterwards, suffered a rogue, almost a stranger, to decoy him into a speculation that promised to bring him fifty per cent. He invested in the traffic of usury what had sufficed to save a hundred such as I am from perdition, and he lost it all. It was nearly his whole fortune; but he lives, and has his luxuries still. He cannot speculate, but he can save; he cared not if I starved, for he finds an hourly happiness in starving himself.”

“And your friend,” said Philip, after a pause, in which his young sympathies went dangerously with the excuses for his benefactor; “what has become of him, and the poor girl?”

“My friend became a great man; he succeeded to his father’s peerage,—a very ancient one,—and to a splendid income. He is living still. Well, you shall hear about the *poor girl*! We are told of victims of seduction dying in a workhouse, or on a dunghill, penitent,

broken-hearted, and uncommonly ragged and sentimental: it may be a frequent case, but it is not the worst. It is worse, I think, when the fair, penitent, innocent, credulous dupe becomes in her turn the deceiver; when she catches vice from the breath upon which she has hung; when she ripens and mellows and rots away into painted, blazing, staring, wholesale harlotry; when in her turn she ruins warm youth with false smiles and long bills; and when worse — worse than all — when she has children, daughters perhaps, brought up to the same trade, cooped, plumped, for some hoary lecher, without a heart in their bosoms, unless a balance for weighing money may be called a heart. Mary became this; and I wish to Heaven she had rather died in a hospital! Her lover polluted her soul as well as her beauty: he found her another lover when he was tired of her. When she was at the age of thirty-six, I met her in Paris, with a daughter of sixteen. I was then flush with money, frequenting *salons*, and playing the part of a fine gentleman; she did not know me at first, and she sought my acquaintance. For you must know, my young friend," said Gawtreys, abruptly breaking off the thread of his narrative, "that I am not altogether the low dog you might suppose in seeing me here. At Paris — ah! you don't know Paris — there is a glorious ferment in society in which the dregs are often uppermost. I came here at the Peace; and here have I resided the greater part of each year ever since. The vast masses of energy and life, broken up by the great thaw of the Imperial system, floating along the tide, are terrible icebergs for the vessel of the state. Some think Napoleonism over, — its effects are only begun. Society is shattered from one end to the other, and I laugh at the little rivets by

which they think to keep it together.<sup>1</sup> But to return: Paris, I say, is the atmosphere for adventurers, — new faces and new men are so common here that they excite no impertinent inquiry, it is so usual to see fortunes made in a day and spent in a month; except in certain circles, there is no walking round a man's character to spy out where it wants piercing! Some lean Greek poet put lead in his pockets to prevent being blown away: put gold in your pockets, and at Paris you may defy the sharpest wind in the world, — yea, even the breath of that old Æolus, Scandal. Well, then, I had money — no matter how I came by it — and health and gaiety; and I was well received in the coteries that exist in all capitals, but mostly in France, where pleasure is the cement that joins many discordant atoms: here I say, I met Mary, and her daughter by my old friend, — the daughter still innocent, but, *sacré!* in what an element of vice! We knew each other's secrets, Mary and I, and kept them: she thought me a greater knave than I was, and she intrusted to me her intention of selling her child to a rich English marquis. On the other hand, the poor girl confided to me her horror of the scenes she witnessed and the snares that surrounded her. What do you think preserved her pure from all danger? Bah! you will never guess! It was partly because, if example corrupts, it as often deters, but principally because she loved. A girl who loves one man purely has about her an amulet which defies the advances of the profligate. There was a handsome young Italian, an artist, who frequented the house, — he was the man.

<sup>1</sup> This passage was written at a period when the dynasty of Louis Philippe seemed the most assured, and Napoleonism was indeed considered extinct.

I had to choose, then, between mother and daughter: I chose the last."

Philip seized hold of Gawtreys hand, grasped it warmly, and the good-for-nothing continued:—

"Do you know that I loved that girl as well as I had ever loved the mother, though in another way; she *was* what I had fancied the mother *to be*,—still more fair, more graceful, more winning, with a heart as full of love as her mother's had been of vanity. I loved that child as if she had been my own daughter; I induced her to leave her mother's house; I secreted her; I saw her married to the man she loved,—I gave her away, and saw no more of her for several months."

"Why?"

"Because I spent them in prison! The young people could not live upon air; I gave them what I had, and, in order to do more, I did something which displeased the police. I narrowly escaped that time: but I am popular, very popular, and with plenty of witnesses not over-scrupulous, I got off! When I was released, I would not go to see them, for my clothes were ragged; the police still watched me, and I would not do *them* harm in the world! Ay, poor wretches! they struggled so hard: he could get very little by his art, though, I believe, he was a cleverish fellow at it, and the money I had given them could not last forever. They lived near the Champs Elysées, and at night I used to steal out and look at them through the window. They seemed so happy and so handsome and so good; but he looked sickly, and I saw that, like all Italians, he languished for his own warm climate. But man is born to act as well as to contemplate," pursued Gawtreys, changing his tone into the *allegro*; "and I was soon driven into my old ways, though in a lower line. I went to London,

just to give my reputation an airing; and when I returned, pretty flush again, the poor Italian was dead, and Fanny was a widow with one boy, and *enceinte* with a second child. So then I sought her again, for her mother had found her out, and was at her with her devilish kindness; but Heaven was merciful, and took her away from both of us. She died in giving birth to a girl, and her last words were uttered to me, imploring me — the adventurer, the charlatan, the good-for-nothing — to keep her child from the clutches of her own mother. Well, sir, I did what I could for both the children; but the boy was consumptive, like his father, and sleeps at Père-la-Chaise. The girl is here, — you shall see her some day. Poor Fanny! if ever the devil will let me, I shall reform for her sake; meanwhile, for her sake, I must get grist for the mill. My story is concluded, for I need not tell you all of my pranks, — of all the parts I have played in life. I have never been a murderer, or a burglar, or a highway robber, or what the law calls a thief. I can only say, as I said before, I have lived upon my wits, and they have been a tolerable capital on the whole. I have been an actor, a money-lender, a physician, a professor of animal magnetism (*that was* lucrative till it went out of fashion, perhaps it will come in again); I have been a lawyer, a house-agent, a dealer in curiosities and china; I have kept a hotel; I have set up a weekly newspaper; I have seen almost every city in Europe, and made acquaintance with some of its jails; but a man who has plenty of brains generally falls on his legs."

"And your father?" said Philip; and here he spoke to Gawtreay of the conversation he had overheard in the churchyard, but on which a scruple of natural delicacy had hitherto kept him silent.



"Well, now," said his host, while a slight blush rose to his cheeks, "I will tell you, that though to my father's sternness and avarice I attribute many of my faults, I yet always had a sort of love for him; and when in London, I accidentally heard that he was growing blind, and living with an artful old jade of a housekeeper, who might send him to rest with a dose of magnesia the night after she had coaxed him to make a will in her favor. I sought him out, and — But you say you heard what passed."

"Yes; and I heard him also call you by name, when it was too late, and I saw the tears on his cheeks."

"Did you? — will you swear to that?" exclaimed Gawtrety, with vehemence; then shading his brow with his hand, he fell into a reverie that lasted some moments.

"If anything happen to me, Philip," he said, abruptly, "perhaps he may yet be a father to poor Fanny; and if he takes to her, she will repay him for whatever pain I may perhaps have cost him. Stop! now I think of it, I will write down his address for you: never forget it, — there! It is time to go to bed."

Gawtrety's tale made a deep impression on Philip. He was too young, too inexperienced, too much borne away by the passion of the narrator, to see that Gawtrety had less cause to blame fate than himself. True, he had been unjustly implicated in the disgrace of an unworthy uncle, but he had lived with that uncle, though he knew him to be a common cheat: true, he had been betrayed by a friend, but he had before known that friend to be a man without principle or honor. But what wonder that an ardent boy saw nothing of this, — saw only the good heart that had saved a poor girl from vice, and sighed to relieve a harsh and avaricious parent?

Even the hints that Gawtreys unawares let fall of practices scarcely covered by the jovial phrase of "a great schoolboy's scrapes," either escaped the notice of Philip, or were charitably construed by him in the compassion and the ignorance of a young, hasty, and grateful heart.

## CHAPTER IV.

And she's a stranger !  
Women, — beware women.

MIDDLETON.

As we love our youngest children best,  
So the last fruit of our affection,  
Wherever we bestow it, is most strong ;  
Since 't is indeed our latest harvest-home,  
Last merriment fore winter !

WEBSTER : *Devil's Law Case.*

I would fain know what kind of thing a man's heart is ?  
I will report it to you : 't is a thing framed  
With divers corners !

ROWLEY.

I HAVE said that Gawtrey's tale made a deep impression on Philip: that impression was increased by subsequent conversations, more frank even than their talk had hitherto been. There was certainly about this man a fatal charm which concealed his vices. It arose, perhaps, from the perfect combinations of his physical frame: from a health which made his spirits buoyant and hearty under all circumstances, and a blood so fresh, so sanguine, that it could not fail to keep the pores of the heart open. But he was not the less — for all his kindly impulses and generous feelings, and despite the manner in which, naturally anxious to make the least unfavorable portrait of himself to Philip, he softened and glossed over the practices of his life — a thorough and complete rogue, a dangerous, desperate, reckless dare-devil. It was easy to see, when anything crossed him, by the cloud on his shaggy brow, by the swelling of the veins

on the forehead, by the dilation of the broad nostril, that he was one to cut his way through every obstacle to an end, — choleric, impetuous, fierce, determined. Such, indeed, were the qualities that made him respected among his associates, as his more bland and humorous ones made him beloved. He was, in fact, the incarnation of that great spirit which the laws of the world raise up against the world, and by which the world's injustice, on a large scale, is awfully chastised; on a small scale, merely nibbled at and harassed, as the rat that gnaws the hoof of the elephant, — the spirit which, on a vast theatre, rises up, gigantic and sublime, in the heroes of war and revolution, in Mirabeaus, Marats, Napoleons; on a minor stage, it shows itself in demagogues, fanatical philosophers, and mob writers; and on the forbidden boards, before whose reeking lamps outcasts sit, at once audience and actors, it never produced a knave more consummate in his part, or carrying it off with more buskined dignity, than William Gawtreay. I call him by his aboriginal name; as for his other appellations, Bacchus himself had not so many!

One day a lady, richly dressed, was ushered by Mr. Birnie into the *bureau* of Mr. Love, alias Gawtreay. Philip was seated by the window, reading, for the first time, the "Candide," — that work, next to "Rasselas," the most hopeless and gloomy of the sports of genius with mankind. The lady seemed rather embarrassed when she perceived Mr. Love was not alone. She drew back, and, drawing her veil still more closely round her, said, in French, —

"Pardon me, I would wish a private conversation."

Philip rose to withdraw, when the lady, observing him with eyes whose lustre shone through the veil, said gently, —

"But, perhaps, the young gentleman is discreet?"

"He is not discreet, he is discretion! — my adopted son. You may confide in him, — upon my honor, you may, madam!" and Mr. Love placed his hand on his heart.

"He is very young," said the lady, in a tone of involuntary compassion, as, with a very white hand, she unclasped the buckle of her cloak.

"He can the better understand the curse of celibacy," returned Mr. Love, smiling.

The lady lifted part of her veil, and discovered a handsome mouth, and a set of small, white teeth; for she, too, smiled, though gravely, as she turned to Morton, and said, —

"You seem, sir, more fitted to be a votary of the temple than one of its officers. However, Monsieur Love, let there be no mistake between us; I do not come here to form a marriage, but to prevent one. I understand that Monsieur the Vicomte de Vaudemont has called into request your services. I am one of the vicomte's family; we are all anxious that he should not contract an engagement of the strange, and, pardon me, unbecoming character which must stamp a union formed at a public office."

"I assure you, madam," said Mr. Love, with dignity, "that we have contributed to the very first —"

"*Mon Dieu!*" interrupted the lady, with much impatience, "spare me a eulogy on your establishment: I have no doubt it is very respectable; and for *grisettes* and *épiciers* may do extremely well. But the vicomte is a man of birth and connections. In a word, what he contemplates is preposterous. I know not what fee Monsieur Love expects; but if he contrive to amuse Monsieur de Vaudemont, and to frustrate every connec-

tion he proposes to form, that fee, whatever it may be, shall be doubled. Do you understand me?"

"Perfectly, madam; yet it is not your offer that would bias me, but the desire to oblige so charming a lady."

"It is agreed then?" said the lady, carelessly; and as she spoke, she again glanced at Philip.

"If madame will call again, I will inform her of my plans," said Mr. Love.

"Yes; I will call again. Good-morning!" As she rose and passed Philip, she wholly put aside her veil, and looked at him with a gaze, entirely free from coquetry, but curious, searching, and perhaps admiring, — the look that an artist may give to a picture that seems of more value than the place where he finds it would seem to indicate. The countenance of the lady herself was fair and noble, and Philip felt a strange thrill at his heart, as, with a slight inclination of her head, she turned from the room.

"Ah!" said Gawtreys, laughing, "this is not the first time I have been paid by relations to break off the marriages I had formed. Egad! if one could open a *bureau* to make married people single, one would soon be a Cræsus! Well, then, this decides me to complete the union between Monsieur Goupille and Mademoiselle de Courval. I had balanced a little hitherto between the *épiciers* and the vicomte. Now I will conclude matters. Do you know, Phil, I think you have made a conquest?"

"Pooh!" said Philip, coloring.

In effect, that very evening Mr. Love saw both the *épiciers* and Adèle, and fixed the marriage-day. As Monsieur Goupille was a person of great distinction in the Faubourg, this wedding was one upon which Mr. Love congratulated himself greatly; and he cheerfully

accepted an invitation for himself and his partners to honor the *noces* with their presence.

A night or two before the day fixed for the marriage of Monsieur Goupille and the aristocratic Adèle, when Mr. Birnie had retired, Gawtrety made his usual preparations for enjoying himself. But this time the cigar and the punch seemed to fail of their effect. Gawtrety remained moody and silent; and Morton was thinking of the bright eyes of the lady who was so much interested against the amours of the Vicomte de Vaudemont.

At last Gawtrety broke silence.

"My young friend," said he, "I told you of my little *protégée*; I have been buying toys for her this morning; she is a beautiful creature: to-morrow is her birthday, — she will then be six years old. But — but," — here Gawtrety sighed, — "I fear she is not all right here," and he touched his forehead.

"I should like much to see her," said Philip, not noticing the latter remark.

"And you shall, — you shall come with me to-morrow. Heigho! I should not like to die, for her sake!"

"Does her wretched relation attempt to regain her?"

"Her relation! No; *she* is no more, — she died about two years since! Poor Mary! I — well, this is folly. But Fanny is at present in a convent; they are all kind to her, but then I pay well. If I were dead, and the pay stopped, — again I ask, what would become of her, unless, as I before said, my father —"

"But you are making a fortune now?"

"If this lasts, — yes; but I live in fear, — the police of this cursed city are lynx-eyed: however, that is the bright side of the question."

"Why not have the child with you, since you love her so much? She would be a great comfort to you."

"Is this a place for a child, — a girl?" said Gawtrety, stamping his foot impatiently. "I should go mad if I saw that villanous deadman's eye bent upon her!"

"You speak of Birnie. How can you endure him?"

"When you are my age you will know why we endure what we dread, — why we make friends of those who else would be most horrible foes: no, no, — nothing can deliver me of this man but death. And — and," added Gawtrety, turning pale, "I cannot murder a man who eats my bread. There are stronger ties, my lad, than affection, that bind men, like galley-slaves, together. He who can hang you puts the halter round your neck and leads you by it like a dog."

A shudder came over the young listener. And what dark secrets, known only to those two, had bound, to a man seemingly his subordinate and tool, the strong will and resolute temper of William Gawtrety?

"But, begone, dull care!" exclaimed Gawtrety, rousing himself. "And, after all, Birnie is a useful fellow, and dare no more turn against me than I against him! Why don't you drink more?"

"'Oh! have you e'er heard of the famed Captain Wattle?'"

and Gawtrety broke out into a loud Bacchanalian hymn, in which Philip could find no mirth, and from which the songster suddenly paused to exclaim, —

"Mind you say nothing about Fanny to Birnie; my secrets with him are not of *that* nature. He could not hurt her, poor lamb! it is true, — at least as far as I can foresee. But one can never feel too sure of one's lamb, if one once introduces it to the butcher!"

The next day being Sunday, the *bureau* was closed, and Philip and Gawtrety repaired to the convent. It was a dismal-looking place as to the exterior; but within,



there was a large garden, well kept, and, notwithstanding the winter, it seemed fair and refreshing compared with the polluted streets. The window of the room into which they were shown looked upon the green sward, with walls covered with ivy at the farther end. And Philip's own childhood came back to him as he gazed on the quiet of the lonely place.

The door opened; an infant voice was heard, — a voice of glee, of rapture; and a child, light and beautiful as a fairy, bounded to Gawtreys breast.

Nestling there, she kissed his face, his hands, his clothes, with a passion that did not seem to belong to her age, laughing and sobbing almost at a breath.

On his part, Gawtreys appeared equally affected; he stroked down her hair with his huge hand, calling her all manner of pet names, in a tremulous voice that vainly struggled to be gay.

At length he took the toys he had brought with him from his capacious pockets, and strewing them on the floor, fairly stretched his vast bulk along; while the child tumbled over him, sometimes grasping at the toys, and then again returning to his bosom, and laying her head there, looked up quietly into his eyes, as if the joy were too much for her.

Morton, unheeded by both, stood by with folded arms. He thought of his lost and ungrateful brother, and muttered to himself, —

“Fool! when she is older, she will forsake him!”

Fanny betrayed in her face the Italian origin of her father. She had that exceeding richness of complexion which, though not common even in Italy, is only to be found in the daughters of that land, and which harmonized well with the purple lustre of her hair, and the full, clear iris of the dark eyes. Never were parted

cherries brighter than her dewy lips; and the color of the open neck and the rounded arms was of a whiteness still more dazzling, from the darkness of the hair and the carnation of the glowing cheek.

Suddenly Fanny started from Gawtreys arms, and running up to Morton, gazed at him wistfully, and said, in French, —

“Who are you? Do you come from the moon? — I think you do.” Then stopping abruptly, she broke into a verse of a nursery-song, which she chanted with a low, listless tone, as if she were not conscious of the sense. As she thus sung, Morton looking at her, felt a strange and painful doubt seize him. The child’s eyes, though soft, were so vacant in their gaze.

“And why do I come from the moon?” said he.

“Because you look sad and cross. I don’t like you, — I don’t like the moon, it gives me a pain here!” and she put her hand to her temples. “Have you got anything for Fanny, — poor, poor Fanny?” and, dwelling on the epithet, she shook her head mournfully.

“You are rich, Fanny, with all those toys.”

“Am I? — everybody calls me poor Fanny, — everybody but papa;” and she ran again to Gawtreys, and laid her head on his shoulder.

“She calls me papa!” said Gawtreys, kissing her; “you hear it? Bless her!”

“And you never kiss any one but Fanny, — you have no other little girl?” said the child, earnestly, and with a look less vacant than that which had saddened Morton.

“No other; no, — nothing under heaven, and perhaps above it, but you!” and he clasped her in his arms. “But,” he added, after a pause, — “but mind me, Fanny, you must like this gentleman. He will be always good

to you: and he had a little brother whom he was as fond of as I am of you."

"No, I won't like him, — I won't like anybody but you and my sister!"

"Sister! — who is your sister?"

The child's face relapsed into an expression almost of idiocy. "I don't know, — I never saw her. I hear her sometimes, but I don't understand what she says. Hush! — come here!" and she stole to the window on tiptoe. Gawtrey followed and looked out.

"Do you hear her, now?" said Fanny. "What does she say?"

As the girl spoke, some bird among the evergreens uttered a shrill, plaintive cry, rather than song, — a sound which the thrush occasionally makes in the winter, and which seems to express something of fear and pain and impatience.

"What does she say? — can you tell me?" asked the child.

"Pooh! that is a bird; why do you call it your sister?"

"I don't know! — because it is — because it — because — I don't know — is it not in pain? Do something for it, papa!"

Gawtrey glanced at Morton, whose face betokened his deep pity, and creeping up to him, whispered, —

"Do you think she is really touched here? No, no; she will outgrow it, — I am sure she will!"

Morton sighed.

Fanny by this time had again seated herself in the middle of the floor, and arranged her toys, but without seeming to take pleasure in them.

At last Gawtrey was obliged to depart. The lay sister who had charge of Fanny was summoned into the

parlor, and then the child's manner entirely changed: her face grew purple, — she sobbed with as much anger as grief. "She would not leave papa; she would not go, that she would not!"

"It is always so," whispered Gawtreys to Morton, in an abashed and apologetic voice. "It is so difficult to get away from her. Just go and talk with her while I steal out."

Morton went to her, as she struggled with the patient, good-natured sister, and began to soothe and caress her, till she turned on him her large humid eyes, and said, mournfully, —

"*Tu es méchant, tu.* Poor Fanny!"

"But this pretty doll —" began the sister.

The child looked at it joylessly, —

"And papa is going to die!"

"Whenever monsieur goes," whispered the nun, "she always says that he is dead, and cries herself quietly to sleep; when monsieur returns, she says he is come to life again. Some one, I suppose, once talked to her about death; and she thinks when she loses sight of any one, that *that* is death."

"Poor child!" said Morton, with a trembling voice.

The child looked up, smiled, stroked his cheek with her little hand, and said, —

"Thank you! Yes! — *poor* Fanny! Ah, he is going — see! — let me go too, — *tu es méchant.*"

"But," said Morton, detaining her gently, "do you know that you give him pain? — you make him cry by showing pain yourself. Don't make him so sad!"

The child seemed struck, hung down her head for a moment, as if in thought, and then, jumping from Morton's lap, ran to Gawtreys, put up her pouting lips and said, —

"One kiss more!"

Gawtreys kissed her, and turned away his head.

"Fanny is a good girl;" and Fanny, as she spoke, went back to Morton, and put her little fingers into her eyes, as if either to shut out Gawtreys retreat from her sight, or to press back her tears.

"Give me the doll now, sister Marie."

Morton smiled and sighed, placed the child, who struggled no more, in the nun's arms, and left the room; but as he closed the door, he looked back, and saw that Fanny had escaped from the sister, thrown herself on the floor, and was crying, but not loud.

"Is she not a little darling?" said Gawtreys, as they gained the street.

"She is, indeed, a most beautiful child!"

"And you will love her if I leave her penniless?" said Gawtreys, abruptly. "It was your love for your mother and your brother that made me like *you* from the first. Ay," continued Gawtreys, in a tone of great earnestness, — "ay, and whatever may happen to me, I will strive and keep you, my poor lad, harmless; and what is better, innocent, even of such matters as sit light enough on my own well-seasoned conscience. In turn, if ever you have the power, be good to her, — yes, be good to her! and I won't say a harsh word to you if ever you like to turn king's evidence against myself."

"Gawtreys!" said Morton, reproachfully, and almost fiercely.

"Bah! — such things are! But tell me honestly, do you think she is *very* strange, — very deficient?"

"I have not seen enough of her to judge," answered Morton, evasively.

"She is so changeful," persisted Gawtreys; "sometimes you would say that she was above her age, she

comes out with such thoughtful, clever things; then, the next moment, she throws me into despair. These nuns are very skilful in education; at least, they are said to be so. The doctors give me hope, too; you see her poor mother was very unhappy at the time of her birth, — delirious, indeed; that may account for it. I often fancy that it is the constant excitement which her state occasions me, that makes me love her so much; you see she is one who can never shift for herself. I *must* get money for her; I have left a little already with the superior, and I would not touch it to save myself from famine! If she has money, people will be kind enough to her. And then," continued Gawtreys, "you must perceive that she loves nothing in the world but me, — me, whom nobody else loves! Well — well, now to the shop again!"

On returning home, the *bonne* informed them that a lady had called, and asked both for Monsieur Love and the young gentleman, and seemed much chagrined at missing both. By the description, Morton guessed she was the fair incognita, and felt disappointed at having lost the interview.

## CHAPTER V.

The cursed carle was at his wonted trade,  
Still tempting heedless men into his snare,  
In witching wise, as I before have said ;  
But when he saw, in goodly gear arrayed,  
The grave majestic knight approaching nigh,  
His countenance fell.

THOMSON: *Castle of Indolence.*

THE morning rose that was to unite Monsieur Goupille with Mademoiselle Adèle de Courval. The ceremony was performed, and bride and bridegroom went through that trying ordeal with becoming gravity. Only the elegant Adèle seemed more unaffectedly agitated than Mr. Love could well account for; she was very nervous in church, and more often turned her eyes to the door than to the altar. Perhaps she wanted to run away; but it was either too late or too early for that proceeding. The rite performed, the happy pair and their friends adjourned to the *Cadran Bleu*, that restaurant so celebrated in the festivities of the good citizens of Paris. Here Mr. Love had ordered, at the *épicier's* expense, a most tasteful entertainment.

"*Sacré!* but you have not played the economist, Monsieur Lofe," said Monsieur Goupille, rather querulously, as he glanced at the long room adorned with artificial flowers, and the table *à cinquante couverts*.

"Bah," replied Mr. Love, "you can retrench afterwards. Think of the fortune she brought you."

"It is a pretty sum, certainly," said Monsieur Goupille, "and the notary is perfectly satisfied."

"There is not a marriage in Paris that does me more credit," said Mr. Love; and he marched off to receive the compliments and congratulations that awaited him among such of the guests as were aware of his good offices. The Vicomte de Vaudemont was of course not present. He had not been near Mr. Love since Adèle had accepted the *épicier*. But Madame Beavor, in a white bonnet lined with lilac, was hanging, sentimentally, on the arm of the Pole, who looked very grand with his white favor; and Mr. Higgins had been introduced, by Mr. Love, to a little dark Creole, who wore paste diamonds, and had very languishing eyes; so that Mr. Love's heart might well swell with satisfaction at the prospect of the various blisses to come, which might owe their origin to his benevolence. In fact, that archpriest of the Temple of Hymen was never more great than he was that day; never did his establishment seem more solid, his reputation more popular, or his fortune more sure. He was the life of the party.

The banquet over, the revellers prepared for a dance. Monsieur Goupille, in tights still tighter than he usually wore, and of a rich nankeen, quite new, with striped silk stockings, opened the ball with the lady of a rich *pâtissier* in the same Faubourg; Mr. Love took out the bride. The evening advanced; and, after several other dances of ceremony, Monsieur Goupille conceived himself entitled to dedicate one to connubial affection. A country-dance was called, and the *épicier* claimed the fair hand of the gentle Adèle. About this time two persons, not hitherto perceived, had quietly entered the room, and, standing near the doorway, seemed examining the dancers, as if in search for some one. They bobbed their heads up and down, to and fro, — now stooped, now stood on tiptoe. The one was a tall, large-whiskered,



fair-haired man; the other, a little, thin, neatly-dressed person, who kept his hand on the arm of his companion, and whispered to him from time to time. The whiskered gentleman replied in a guttural tone, which proclaimed his origin to be German. The busy dancers did not perceive the strangers. The bystanders did, and a hum of curiosity circled round; who could they be? — who had invited them? — they were new faces in the Faubourg, — perhaps relations to Adèle?

In high delight the fair bride was skipping down the middle, while Monsieur Goupille, wiping his forehead with care, admired her agility; when, lo and behold! the whiskered gentleman I have described abruptly advanced from his companion, and cried, —

*“La voilà! — sacré tonnerre!”*

At that voice, — at that apparition, the bride halted: so suddenly, indeed, that she had not time to put down both feet, but remained with one high in the air, while the other sustained itself on the light fantastic toe. The company naturally imagined this to be an operatic flourish, which called for approbation. Monsieur Love, who was thundering down behind her, cried “Bravo!” and as the well-grown gentleman had to make a sweep to avoid disturbing her equilibrium, he came full against the whiskered stranger, and sent him off as a bat sends a ball.

*“Mon Dieu!”* cried Monsieur Goupille. *“Ma douce amie, — she has fainted away!”* And, indeed, Adèle had no sooner recovered her balance than she resigned it once more into the arms of the startled Pole, who was happily at hand.

In the mean time the German stranger, who had saved himself from falling by coming with his full force upon the toes of Mr. Higgins, again advanced to the

spot, and, rudely seizing the fair bride by the arm, exclaimed, —

“No sham if you please, madame, — speak! What the devil have you done with the money?”

“Really, sir,” said Monsieur Goupille, drawing up his cravat, “this is very extraordinary conduct! What have you got to say to this lady’s money? — it is *my* money now, sir!”

“Oho! it is, is it? we’ll soon see that. *Approchez donc, Monsieur Favart, faites votre devoir.*”<sup>1</sup>

At these words the small companion of the stranger slowly sauntered to the spot, while at the sound of his name and the tread of his step, the throng gave way to the right and left. For Monsieur Favart was one of the most renowned chiefs of the great Parisian police, — a man worthy to be the contemporary of the illustrious Vidocq.

“*Calmez vous, messieurs*; do not be alarmed, ladies,” said this gentleman, in the mildest of all human voices; and certainly no oil dropped on the waters ever produced so tranquillizing an effect as that small, feeble, gentle tenor. The Pole in especial, who was holding the fair bride with both his arms, shook all over, and seemed about to let his burden gradually slide to the floor, when Monsieur Favart, looking at him with a benevolent smile, said, —

“*Aha, mon brave! c’est toi. Restez donc. Restez, tenant toujours la dame!*”<sup>2</sup>

The Pole, thus condemned in the French idiom, “*always* to hold the *dame*,” mechanically raised the arms he had previously dejected, and the police-officer, with an approving nod of the head, said, —

<sup>1</sup> Approach then, Monsieur Favart, and do your duty.

<sup>2</sup> Aha, my fine fellow! it’s you. Stay, then. Stay, always holding the *dame*.

"*Bon ! ne bougez point, c'est ça !*"<sup>1</sup>

Monsieur Goupille, in equal surprise and indignation to see his better half thus consigned, without any care to his own marital feelings, to the arms of another, was about to snatch her from the Pole, when Monsieur Favart, touching him on the breast with his little finger, said in the suavest manner,—

"*Mon bourgeois*, meddle not with what does not concern you!"

"With what does not concern *me*!" repeated Monsieur Goupille, drawing himself up to so great a stretch that he seemed pulling off his tights the wrong way. "Explain yourself, if you please. This lady is my wife!"

"Say that again,—that's all!" cried the whiskered stranger, in most horrible French, and with a furious grimace, as he shook both his fists just under the nose of the *épicier*.

"Say it again, sir," said Monsieur Goupille, by no means daunted; "and why should not I say it again? That lady is my wife!"

"You lie! — *she is mine*!" cried the German; and, bending down, he caught the fair Adèle from the Pole with as little ceremony as if she had never had a great-grandfather a marquis, and giving her a shake that might have roused the dead, thundered out,—

"Speak! Madame Bihl! Are you my wife or not?"

"*Monstre*!" murmured Adèle, opening her eyes.

"There: you hear, — she owns me!" said the German, appealing to the company with a triumphant air.

"*C'est vrai*!" said the soft voice of the policeman. "And now, pray don't let us disturb your amusements any longer. We have a *fiacre* at the door. Remove your lady, Monsieur Bihl."

<sup>1</sup> Good! don't stir, — that's it.

"Monsieur Lofe! — Monsieur Lofe!" cried, or rather screeched, the *épicier*, darting across the room, and seizing the *chef* by the tail of his coat, just as he was half-way through the door, "Come back! *Quelle mauvaise plaisanterie me faites-vous ici?*"<sup>1</sup> Did you not tell me that lady was single? Am I married or not? Do I stand on my head or my heels?"

"Hush — hush! *mon bon bourgeois!*" whispered Mr. Love, "all shall be explained to-morrow!"

"Who is this gentleman?" asked Monsieur Favart, approaching Mr. Love, who, seeing himself in for it, suddenly jerked off the *épicier*, thrust his hands down into his breeches-pockets, buried his chin in his cravat, elevated his eyebrows, screwed in his eyes, and puffed out his cheeks, so that the astonished Monsieur Goupille really thought himself bewitched, and literally did not recognize the face of the match-maker.

"Who is this gentleman?" repeated the little officer, standing beside, or rather below, Mr. Love, and looking so diminutive by the contrast that you might have fancied that the priest of Hymen had only to breathe to blow him away.

"Who should he be, monsieur?" cried, with great pertness, Madame Rosalie Caumartin, coming to the relief with the generosity of her sex. "This is Monsieur Lofe, — *Anglais célèbre*. What have you to say against him?"

"He has got five hundred francs of mine!" cried the *épicier*.

The policeman scanned Mr. Love with great attention. "So you are in Paris again? *Hein!* — *vous jouez toujours votre rôle!*"<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> What scurvy trick is this you're playing me?

<sup>2</sup> You're always acting your part.

"*Ma foi!*" said Mr. Love, boldly; "I don't understand what monsieur means; my character is well known: go and inquire it in London; ask the Secretary of Foreign Affairs what is said of me; inquire of my Ambassador; demand of my —"

"*Votre passeport, monsieur?*"

"It is at home. A gentleman does not carry his passport in his pocket when he goes to a ball!"

"I will call and see it,—*au revoir!* Take my advice and leave Paris; I think I have seen you somewhere!"

"Yet I have never had the honor to marry monsieur!" said Mr. Love, with a polite bow.

In return for his joke the policeman gave Mr. Love one look,—it was a quiet look, very quiet; but Mr. Love seemed uncommonly affected by it; he did not say another word, but found himself outside the house in a twinkling. Monsieur Favart turned round and saw the Pole making himself as small as possible behind the goodly proportions of Madame Beavor.

"What name does that gentleman go by?"

"So-vo-lofski, the heroic Pole," cried Madame Beavor, with sundry misgivings at the unexpected cowardice of so great a patriot.

"*Hein!* take care of yourselves, ladies. I have nothing against that person this time. But Monsieur Latour has served his apprenticeship at the galleys, and is no more a Pole than I am a Jew."

"And this lady's fortune!" cried Monsieur Goupille, pathetically; "the settlements are all made,—the notaries all paid. I am sure there must be some mistake."

Monsieur Bihl, who had by this time restored his lost Helen to her senses, stalked up to the *épiciér*, dragging the lady along with him.

"Sir, there is no mistake! But, when I have got the money, if you like to have the lady you are welcome to her."

"*Monstre!*" again muttered the fair Adèle.

"The long and the short of it," said Monsieur Favart, "is, that Monsieur Bihl is a *brave garçon*, and has been half over the world as a courier."

"A courier!" exclaimed several voices.

"Madame was nursery-governess to an English *milord*. They married and quarrelled,—no harm in that, *mes amis*; nothing more common. Monsieur Bihl is a very faithful fellow, nursed his last master in an illness that ended fatally, because he travelled with his doctor. *Milord* left him a handsome legacy; he retired from service, and fell ill, perhaps from idleness or beer. Is not that the story, Monsieur Bihl?"

"He was always drunk, — the wretch!" sobbed Adèle.

"That was to drown my domestic sorrows," said the German; "and when I was sick in my bed, madame ran off with my money. Thanks to monsieur, I have found both, and I wish you a very good night."

"*Dansez vous toujours, mes amis,*" said the officer, bowing. And following Adèle and her spouse, the little man left the room, — where he had caused, in chests so broad and limbs so doughty, much the same consternation as that which some diminutive ferret occasions in a burrow of rabbits twice his size.

Morton had outstayed Mr. Love. But he thought it unnecessary to linger long after that gentleman's departure; and, in the general hubbub that ensued, he crept out unperceived, and soon arrived at the *bureau*. He found Mr. Love and Mr. Birnie already engaged in packing up their effects. "Why, — when did *you* leave?" said Morton to Mr. Birnie.

"I saw the policeman enter."

"And why the deuce did not you tell us?" said Gawtrety.

"Every man for himself. Besides, Mr. Love was dancing," replied Mr. Birnie, with a dull glance of disdain.

"Philosophy!" muttered Gawtrety, thrusting his dress-coat into his trunk, then suddenly changing his voice, "Ha! ha! it was a very good joke after all, — own I did it well. Ecod! if he had not given me that look, I think I should have turned the tables on him. But those d—d fellows learn of the mad doctors how to tame us. Faith, my heart went down to my shoes, — yet I'm no coward!"

"But, after all, he evidently did not know you," said Morton; "and what has he to say against you. Your trade is a strange one, but not dishonest. Why give up as if —"

"My young friend," interrupted Gawtrety, "whether the officer comes after us or not, our trade is ruined: that infernal Adèle, with her fabulous *grandmaman*, has done for us. Goupille will blow the temple about our ears. No help for it, — eh, Birnie?"

"None."

"Go to bed, Philip; we'll call thee at daybreak, for we must make clear work before our neighbors open their shutters."

Reclined, but half undressed, on his bed in the little cabinet, Morton revolved the events of the evening. The thought that he should see no more of that white hand and that lovely mouth, which still haunted his recollection as appertaining to the incognita, greatly indisposed him towards the abrupt flight intended by Gawtrety, while (so much had his faith in that person depended upon respect for his confident daring, and so

thoroughly fearless was Morton's own nature) he felt himself greatly shaken in his allegiance to the chief, by recollecting the effect produced on his valor by a single glance from the instrument of law. He had not yet lived long enough to be aware that men are sometimes the representatives of things; that what the scytale was to the Spartan hero, a sheriff's writ often is to a Waterloo medallist; that a Bow Street runner will enter the foulest den where murder sits with his fellows, and pick out his prey with the beck of his forefinger. That, in short, the thing called LAW, once made tangible and present, rarely fails to palsy the fierce heart of the thing called CRIME. For law is the symbol of all mankind reared against one foe, — the man of crime. Not yet aware of this truth, nor, indeed, in the least suspecting Gawtrey of worse offences than those of a charlatanic and equivocal profession, the young man mused over his protector's cowardice in disdain and wonder; till, wearied with conjectures, distrust, and shame at his own strange position of obligation to one whom he could not respect, he fell asleep.

When he woke, he saw the gray light of dawn that streamed cheerlessly through his shutterless window, struggling with the faint ray of a candle that Gawtrey, shading with his hand, held over the sleeper. He started up, and, in the confusion of waking and the imperfect light by which he beheld the strong features of Gawtrey, half imagined it was a foe who stood before him.

"Take care, man!" said Gawtrey, as Morton, in this belief, grasped his arm. "You have a precious rough gripe of your own. Be quiet, will you? I have a word to say to you." Here Gawtrey, placing the candle on a chair, returned to the door and closed it.



"Look you," he said in a whisper, "I have nearly run through my circle of invention, and my wit, fertile as it is, can present to me little encouragement in the future. The eyes of this Favart, once on me, every disguise and every double will not long avail. I dare not return to London; I am too well known in Brussels, Berlin, and Vienna —"

"But," interrupted Morton, raising himself on his arm, and fixing his dark eyes upon his host, — "but you have told me again and again that you have committed no crime, why then be so fearful of discovery?"

"Why," repeated Gawtrey, with a slight hesitation, which he instantly overcame, — "why! have not you yourself learned that appearances have the effect of crimes? — were you not chased as a thief when I rescued you from your foe the law? — are you not, though a boy in years, under an alias, and an exile from your own land? And how can you put these austere questions to me, who am growing gray in the endeavor to extract sunbeams from cucumbers, — subsistence from poverty? I repeat that there are reasons why I must avoid, for the present, the great capitals. I must sink in life, and take to the provinces. Birnie is sanguine as ever; but he is a terrible sort of comforter. Enough of that. Now to yourself: our savings are less than you might expect; to be sure, Birnie has been treasurer, and I have laid by a little for Fanny, which I will rather starve than touch. There remain, however, 150 napoleons, and our effects, sold at a fourth their value, will fetch 150 more. Here is your share. I have compassion on you. I told you I would bear you harmless and innocent. Leave us, while yet time."

It seemed, then, to Morton that Gawtrey had divined his thoughts of shame and escape of the previous night;

perhaps Gawtrety had: and such is the human heart, that instead of welcoming the very release he had half contemplated, now that it was offered him, Philip shrunk from it as a base desertion.

"Poor Gawtrety!" said he, pushing back the canvas bag of gold held out to him, "you shall not go over the world, and feel that the orphan you fed and fostered left you to starve with your money in his pocket. When you again assure me that you have committed no crime, you again remind me that gratitude has no right to be severe upon the shifts and errors of its benefactor. If you do not conform to society, what has society done for me? No! I will not forsake you in a reverse. Fortune has given you a fall. What then, courage, and at her again!"

These last words were said so heartily and cheerfully as Morton sprang from the bed, that they inspirited Gawtrety, who had really desponded of his lot.

"Well," said he, "I cannot reject the only friend left me; and while I live — But I will make no professions. Quick, then, our luggage is already gone, and I hear Birnie grunting the rogue's march of retreat."

Morton's toilet was soon completed, and the three associates bade adieu to the *bureau*.

Birnie, who was taciturn and impenetrable as ever, walked a little before as guide. They arrived, at length, at a *serrurier's* shop, placed in an alley near the Porte St. Denis. The *serrurier* himself, a tall, begrimed, black-bearded man, was taking the shutters from his shop as they approached. He and Birnie exchanged silent nods; and the former, leaving his work, conducted them up a very filthy flight of stairs to an attic, where a bed, two stools, one table, and an old walnut-tree bureau, formed the sole articles of furniture. Gawtrety

looked rather ruefully round the black, low, damp walls, and said, in a crestfallen tone, —

"We were better off at the Temple of Hymen. But get us a bottle of wine, some eggs, and a frying-pan, — by Jove, I am a capital hand at an omelet!"

The *serrurier* nodded again, grinned, and withdrew.

"Rest here," said Birnie, in his calm, passionless voice, that seemed to Morton, however, to assume an unwonted tone of command. "I will go and make the best bargain I can for our furniture, buy fresh clothes, and engage our places for Tours."

"For Tours?" repeated Morton.

"Yes, there are some English there; one can live wherever there are English," said Gawtrety.

"Hum!" grunted Birnie, dryly, and, buttoning up his coat, he walked slowly away.

About noon he returned with a bundle of clothes, which Gawtrety, who always regained his elasticity of spirit wherever there was fair play to his talents, examined with great attention, and many exclamations of "*Bon, c'est ça.*"

"I have done well with the Jew," said Birnie, drawing from his coat-pocket two heavy bags, "one hundred and eighty napoleons. We shall commence with a good capital."

"You are right, my friend," said Gawtrety.

The *serrurier* was then despatched to the best *restaurant* in the neighborhood, and the three adventurers made a less Socratic dinner than might have been expected.

## CHAPTER VI.

Then out again he flies to wing his mazy round.

THOMSON'S *Castle of Indolence*.

Again he gazed, "It is," said he, "the same;  
There sits he upright in his seat secure,  
As one whose conscience is correct and pure."

CRABBE.

THE adventurers arrived at Tours, and established themselves there in a lodging, without any incident worth narrating by the way.

At Tours, Morton had nothing to do but take his pleasure and enjoy himself. He passed for a young heir; Gawtreys for his tutor, — a doctor in divinity; Birnie for his valet. The task of maintenance fell on Gawtreys, who hit off his character to a hair; larded his grave jokes with university scraps of Latin; looked big and well-fed; wore knee-breeches and a shovel hat; and played whist with the skill of a veteran vicar. By his science in that game he made, at first, enough at least to defray their weekly expenses. But, by degrees, the good people at Tours, who, under pretence of health, were there for economy, grew shy of so excellent a player; and, though Gawtreys always swore solemnly that he played with the most scrupulous honor (an asseveration which Morton, at least, implicitly believed), and no proof to the contrary was ever detected, yet a first-rate card-player is always a suspicious character, unless the losing parties know exactly who he is. The market fell off, and Gawtreys at length thought it prudent to extend their travels.

"Ah!" said Mr. Gawtrety, "the world nowadays has grown so ostentatious, that one cannot travel advantageously without a post-chariot and four horses." At length they found themselves at Milan, which at that time was one of the El Dorados for gamesters. Here, however, for want of introductions, Mr. Gawtrety found it difficult to get into society. The nobles, proud and rich, played high, but were circumspect in their company; the *bourgeoisie*, industrious and energetic, preserved much of the old Lombard shrewdness; there were no *tables d'hôte* and public reunions. Gawtrety saw his little capital daily diminishing, with the Alps at the rear, and poverty in the van. At length, always on the *qui vive*, he contrived to make acquaintance with a Scotch family of great respectability. He effected this by picking up a snuff-box which the Scotchman had dropped in taking out his handkerchief. This politeness paved the way to a conversation in which Gawtrety made himself so agreeable, and talked with such zest of the Modern Athens, and the tricks practised upon travellers, that he was presented to Mrs. Macgregor; cards were interchanged; and, as Mr. Gawtrety lived in tolerable style, the Macgregors pronounced him "a vara genteel mon." Once in the house of a respectable person, Gawtrety contrived to turn himself round and round, till he burrowed a hole into the English circle then settled in Milan. His whist-playing came into requisition, and once more fortune smiled upon skill.

To this house the pupil one evening accompanied the tutor. When the whist-party, consisting of two tables, was formed, the young man found himself left out with an old gentleman, who seemed loquacious and good-natured, and who put many questions to Morton which he found it difficult to answer. One of the whist-tables

was now in a state of revolution, — namely, a lady had cut out, and a gentleman cut in, when the door opened, and Lord Lilburne was announced.

Mr. Macgregor, rising, advanced with great respect to this personage.

“ I scarcely ventured to hope you would coom, Lord Lilburne, the night is so cold.”

“ You did not allow sufficiently, then, for the dulness of my solitary inn and the attractions of your circle. Aha! whist, I see.”

“ You play sometimes? ”

“ Very seldom, now; I have sown all my wild oats, and even the ace of spades can scarcely dig them out again.”

“ Ha! ha! vara gude.”

“ I will look on; ” and Lord Lilburne drew his chair to the table, exactly opposite to Mr. Gawtrey.

The old gentleman turned to Philip.

“ An extraordinary man, — Lord Lilburne; you have heard of him, of course? ”

“ No, indeed; what of him? ” asked the young man, rousing himself.

“ What of him? ” said the old gentleman, with a smile; “ why the newspapers, if you ever read them, will tell you enough of the elegant, the witty Lord Lilburne, — a man of eminent talent, though indolent. He was wild in his youth, as clever men often are; but, on attaining his title and fortune, and marrying into the family of the then premier, he became more sedate. They say he might make a great figure in politics if he would. He has a very high reputation, — very. People do say he is still fond of pleasure, but that is a common failing amongst the aristocracy. Morality is only found in the middle classes, young

gentleman. It is a lucky family, that of Lilburne; his sister, Mrs. Beaufort — ”

“Beaufort!” exclaimed Morton, and then muttered to himself, “Ah, true, — true, I have heard the name of Lilburne before.”

“Do you know the Beauforts? Well, you remember how luckily Robert, Lilburne’s brother-in-law, came into that fine property just as his predecessor was about to marry a — ”

Morton scowled at his garrulous acquaintance, and stalked abruptly to the card-table.

Ever since Lord Lilburne had seated himself opposite to Mr. Gawtreys, that gentleman had evinced a perturbation of manner that became obvious to the company. He grew deadly pale, his hands trembled, he moved uneasily in his seat, he missed deal, he trumped his partner’s best diamond, finally he revoked, threw down his money, and said, with a forced smile, “That the heat of the room overcame him.” As he rose, Lord Lilburne rose also, and the eyes of both met, — those of Lilburne were calm, but penetrating and inquisitive in their gaze; those of Gawtreys were like balls of fire. He seemed gradually to dilate in his height, his broad chest expanded, he breathed hard.

“Ah, Doctor,” said Mr. Macgregor, “let me introduce you to Lord Lilburne.”

The peer bowed haughtily; Mr. Gawtreys did not return the salutation, but with a sort of gulp as if he were swallowing some burst of passion, strode to the fire; and then, turning round, again fixed his gaze upon the new guest. Lilburne, however, who had never lost his self-composure at this strange rudeness, was now quietly talking with their host.

“Your Doctor seems an eccentric man: a little

absent, — learned, I suppose. Have you been to Como yet? ”

Mr. Gawtrety remained by the fire beating the devil’s tattoo upon the chimney-piece, and ever and anon turning his glance towards Lilburne, who seemed to have forgotten his existence.

Both these guests stayed till the party broke up, Mr. Gawtrety apparently wishing to outstay Lord Lilburne; for, when the last went downstairs, Mr. Gawtrety, nodding to his comrade, and giving a hurried bow to the host, descended also. As they passed the porter’s lodge, they found Lilburne on the step of his carriage; he turned his head abruptly, and again met Mr. Gawtrety’s eye, paused a moment, and whispered over his shoulder, —

“ So we remember each other, sir? Let us not meet again; and, on that condition, by-gones are by-gones.”

“ Scoundrel! ” muttered Gawtrety, clenching his fists; but the peer had sprung into his carriage with a lightness scarcely to be expected from his lameness, and the wheels whirled within an inch of the *soi-disant* doctor’s right pump.

Gawtrety walked on for some moments in great excitement; at length he turned to his companion: —

“ Do you guess who Lord Lilburne is? I will tell you, — my first foe and Fanny’s grandfather! Now note the justice of fate: Here is this man, — mark well, — this man, who commenced life by putting his faults on my own shoulders! From that little boss has fungused out a terrible hump. This man who seduced my affianced bride, and then left her whole soul, once fair and blooming — I swear it — with its leaves fresh from the dews of heaven, one rank leprosy, — this man who, rolling in riches, learned to cheat and pilfer as a boy learns to



dance and play the fiddle, and (to damn me whose happiness he had blasted) accused me to the world of his own crime; here is this man who has not left off one vice, but added to those of his youth the bloodless craft of the veteran knave; here is this man, flattered, courted, great, marching through lanes of bowing parasites, to an illustrious epitaph and a marble tomb; and I, a rogue too, if you will, but rogue for my bread, dating from him my errors and my ruin! I, vagabond, outcast, skulking through tricks to avoid crime, — why the difference? Because one is born rich and the other poor, — because *he* has no excuse for crime, and therefore no one suspects him! ”

The wretched man (for at that moment he was wretched) paused breathless from his passionate and rapid burst, and before him rose in its marble majesty, with the moon full upon its shining spires — the wonder of Gothic Italy, — the Cathedral Church of Milan.

“Chafe not yourself at the universal fate,” said the young man, with a bitter smile on his lips and pointing to the cathedral. “I have not lived long, but I have learned already enough to know this, — he who could raise a pile like that, dedicated to Heaven, would be honored as a saint; he who knelt to God by the roadside under a hedge, would be sent to the house of correction as a vagabond! The difference between man and man is money, and will be, when you, the despised charlatan, and Lilburne, the honored cheat, have not left as much dust behind you as will fill a snuff-box. Comfort yourself, you are in the majority.”

## CHAPTER VII.

## A desert wild

Before them stretched bare, comfortless, and vast,  
With gibbets, bones, and carcasses defiled.

THOMSON'S *Castle of Indolence*.

MR. GAWTREY did not wish to give his foe the triumph of thinking he had driven him from Milan: he resolved to stay and brave it out; but when he appeared in public, he found the acquaintances he had formed bow politely, but cross to the other side of the way. No more invitations to tea and cards showered in upon the jolly parson. He was puzzled, for people, while they shunned him, did not appear uncivil. He found out at last that a report was circulated that he was deranged; though he could not trace this rumor to Lord Lilburne, he was at no loss to guess from whom it had emanated. His own eccentricities, especially his recent manner at Mr. Macgregor's, gave confirmation to the charge. Again the funds began to sink low in the canvas bags, and at length, in despair, Mr. Gawtreys was obliged to quit the field. They returned to France through Switzerland, — a country too poor for gamesters; and ever since the interview with Lilburne, a great change had come over Gawtreys's gay spirit: he grew moody and thoughtful; he took no pains to replenish the common stock; he talked much and seriously to his young friend of poor Fanny, and owned that he yearned to see her again. The desire to return to Paris haunted him like a fatality; he saw the danger that awaited him there, but it only

allured him the more, — as the candle does the moth whose wings it has singed. Birnie, who, in all their vicissitudes and wanderings, their ups and downs, retained the same tacit, immovable demeanor, received with a sneer the orders at last to march back upon the French capital. “You would never have left it, if you had taken my advice,” he said, and quitted the room.

Mr. Gawtrety gazed after him, and muttered, “Is the die then cast?”

“What does he mean?” said Morton.

“You will know soon,” replied Gawtrety, and he followed Birnie; and from that time the whispered conferences with that person, which had seemed suspended during their travels, were renewed.

One morning three men were seen entering Paris on foot through the Porte St. Denis. It was a fine day in spring, and the whole city looked gay with its loitering passengers and gaudy shops, and under that clear blue exhilarating sky so peculiar to France.

Two of these men walked abreast, the other preceded them a few steps. The one who went first, thin, pale, and threadbare, yet seemed to suffer the least from fatigue; he walked with a long, swinging, noiseless stride, looking to the right and left from the corners of his eyes. Of the two who followed, one was handsome and finely formed, but of swarthy complexion, young, yet with a look of care; the other, of sturdy frame, leaned on a thick stick, and his eyes were gloomily cast down.

“Philip,” said the last, “in coming back to Paris, I feel that I am coming back to my grave!”

“Pooh! you were equally despondent on our excursions elsewhere.”

"Because I was always thinking of poor Fanny, and because — because — Birnie was ever at me with his horrible temptations!"

"Birnie! I loathe the man. Will you never get rid of him?"

"I cannot! Hush! he will hear us! How unlucky we have been! and now without a sou in our pockets: here the dunghill, — there the jail! *We are in his power at last!*"

"His power! what mean you?"

"What ho! Birnie!" cried Gawtrey, unheeding Morton's question, "let us halt and breakfast; I am tired."

"You forget! — we have no money till we make it!" returned Birnie, coldly. "Come to the *serrurier's*, — he will trust us!"

## CHAPTER VIII.

Gaunt Beggary and Scorn with many hell-hounds more.

THOMSON'S *Castle of Indolence*.

The other was a fell, spiteful fiend. — *Ibid.*

Your happiness behold ! then straight a wand  
He waved, an anti-magic power that hath  
Truth from illusive falsehood to command.

*Ibid.*

But what for us, the children of despair,  
Brought to the brink of hell, — what hope remains ?

RESOLVE, RESOLVE !

*Ibid.*

It may be observed that there are certain years in which, in a civilized country, some particular crime comes into vogue. It flares its season, and then burns out. Thus at one time we have Burking, — at another, Swingism ; now, suicide is in vogue ; now, poisoning tradespeople in apple-dumplings ; now, little boys stab each other with penknives ; now, common soldiers shoot at their sergeants. Almost every year there is one crime peculiar to it, — a sort of annual which overruns the country, but does not bloom again. Unquestionably the press has a great deal to do with these epidemics. Let a newspaper once give an account of some out-of-the-way atrocity that has the charm of being novel, and certain depraved minds fasten to it like leeches. They brood over and revolve it, — the idea grows up, a horrid phantasmalian monomania ;<sup>1</sup> and all of a sudden, in a hundred different

<sup>1</sup> An old Spanish writer, treating of the Inquisition, has some very striking remarks on the kind of madness which, whenever some terrible notoriety is given to a particular offence, leads per-

places, the one seed sown by the leaden types springs up into foul flowering. But if the first reported aboriginal crime has been attended with impunity, how much more does the imitative faculty cling to it! Ill-judged mercy falls, not like dew, but like a great heap of manure, on the rank deed.

Now it happened that at the time I write of, or rather a little before, there had been detected and tried in Paris a most redoubted coiner. He had carried on the business with a dexterity that won admiration even for the offence; and, moreover, he had served previously with some distinction at Austerlitz and Marengo. The consequence was that the public went with instead of against him, and his sentence was transmuted to three years' imprisonment by the government; for all governments in free countries aspire rather to be popular than just.

No sooner was this case reported in the journals, — and even the gravest took notice of it, which is not common with the scholastic journals of France, — no sooner did it make a stir and a sensation, and cover the criminal with celebrity, than the result became noticeable in a very large issue of false money.

Coining, in the year I now write of, was *the* fashionable crime. The police were roused into full vigor: it became known to them that there was one gang in especial who cultivated this art with singular success. Their coinage was, indeed, so good, so superior to all their rivals, that it was often unconsciously preferred by the

sons of distempered fancy to accuse themselves of it. He observes that when the cruelties of the Inquisition against the imaginary crime of sorcery were the most barbarous, this singular frenzy led numbers to accuse themselves of sorcery. The publication and celebrity of the crime begat the desire of the crime.

public to the real mintage. At the same time they carried on their calling with such secrecy that they utterly baffled discovery.

An immense reward was offered by the *bureau* to any one who would betray his accomplices, and Monsieur Favart was placed at the head of a commission of inquiry. This person had himself been a *faux monnoyer*, and was an adept in the art, and it was he who had discovered the redoubted coiner who had brought the crime into such notoriety. Monsieur Favart was a man of the most vigilant acuteness, the most indefatigable research, and of a courage which, perhaps, is more common than we suppose. It is a popular error to suppose that courage means courage in everything. Put a hero on board ship at a five-barred gate, and if he is not used to hunting he will turn pale. Put a fox-hunter on one of the Swiss chasms, over which the mountaineer springs like a roe, and his knees will knock under him. People are brave in the dangers to which they accustom themselves, either in imagination or practice.

Monsieur Favart, then, was a man of the most daring bravery in facing rogues and cutthroats. He awed them with his very eye; yet he had been known to have been kicked downstairs by his wife, and when he was drawn into the grand army, he deserted the eve of his first battle. Such, as moralists say, is the inconsistency of man!

But Monsieur Favart was sworn to trace the coiners, and he had never failed yet in any enterprise he undertook. One day he presented himself to his chief with a countenance so elated, that that penetrating functionary said to him at once, —

“ You have heard of our messieurs! ”

“ I have: I am to visit them to-night.”

“ Bravo! How many men will you take? ”

"From twelve to twenty to leave without on guard. But I must enter alone. Such is the condition: an accomplice who fears his own throat too much to be openly a betrayer, will introduce me to the house,—nay, to the very room. By his description, it is necessary I should know the exact locale in order to cut off retreat; so to-morrow night I shall surround the beehive and take the honey."

"They are desperate fellows, these coiners, always; better be cautious."

"You forget, I was one of them, and know the masonry."

About the same time this conversation was going on at the *bureau* of the police, in another part of the town Morton and Gawtreys were seated alone. It is some weeks since they entered Paris, and spring has mellowed into summer. The house in which they lodged was in the lordly *quartier* of the Faubourg St. Germain; the neighboring streets were venerable with the ancient edifices of a fallen *noblesse*,—but their tenement was in a narrow, dingy lane, and the building itself seemed beggarly and ruinous. The apartment was in an attic on the sixth story, and the window, placed at the back of the lane, looked upon another row of houses of a better description, that communicated with one of the great streets of the *quartier*. The space between their abode and their opposite neighbors was so narrow that the sun could scarcely pierce between. In the height of summer might be found there a perpetual shade.

The pair were seated by the window. Gawtreys, well-dressed, smooth-shaven, as in his palmy time; Morton, in the same garments with which he had entered Paris, weather-stained and ragged. Looking towards the casements of the attic in the opposite house, Gawtreys said,



mutteringly, "I wonder where Birnie has been, and why he is not returned: I grow suspicious of that man."

"Suspicious of what?" asked Morton. "Of his honesty? Would he rob you?"

"Rob me! Humph,—perhaps! But you see I am in Paris, in spite of the hints of the police; he may denounce me."

"Why then suffer him to lodge away from you?"

"Why? because by having separate houses there are two channels of escape. A dark night, and a ladder thrown across from window to window, he is with us, or we with him."

"But wherefore such precautions? You blind, you deceive me; what have you done?—what is your employment now? You are mute. Hark you, Gawtreys! I have pinned my fate to you,—I am fallen from hope itself. At times it almost makes me mad to look back,—and yet you do not trust me. Since your return to Paris you are absent whole nights,—often days; you are moody and thoughtful,—yet, whatever your business, it seems to bring you ample returns."

"You think *that*," said Gawtreys, mildly, and with a sort of pity in his voice, "yet you refuse to take even the money to change those rags."

"Because I know not how the money was gained. Ah! Gawtreys, I am not too proud for charity; but I am for —"

He checked the word uppermost in his thoughts, and resumed,—

"Yes; your occupations seem lucrative. It was but yesterday Birnie gave me fifty napoleons, for which he said you wished change in silver."

"Did he? The ras— Well! and you got change for them?"

"I know not why, but I refused."

"That was right, Philip. Do nothing that man tells you."

"Will you then trust me? You are engaged in some horrible traffic! it may be blood! I am no longer a boy: I have a will of my own; I will not be silently and blindly entrapped to perdition. If I march thither, it shall be with my own consent. Trust me, and this day, or we part to-morrow."

"Be ruled. Some secrets it is better not to know."

"It matters not! I have come to my decision: I ask yours."

Gawtrey paused for some moments in deep thought. At last he lifted his eyes to Philip, and replied,—

"Well, then, if it must be. Sooner or later it must have been so, and I want a confidant. You are bold, and will not shrink. You desire to know my occupation,—will you witness it to-night?"

"I am prepared: to-night!"

Here a step was heard on the stairs, a knock at the door, and Birnie entered.

He drew aside Gawtrey, and whispered him, as usual, for some moments.

Gawtrey nodded his head, and then said aloud,—

"To-morrow we shall talk without reserve before my young friend. To-night he joins us."

"To-night! — very well!" said Birnie, with his cold sneer. "He must take the oath; and you, with your life, will be responsible for his honesty?"

"Ay! it is the rule."

"Good-by, then, till we meet," said Birnie, and withdrew.

"I wonder," said Gawtrey, musingly, and between his grinded teeth, "whether I shall ever have a good fair

shot at that fellow? Ho! ho!" and his laugh shook the walls.

Morton looked hard at Gawtreys, as the latter now sunk down in his chair, and gazed with a vacant stare, that seemed almost to partake of imbecility, upon the opposite wall. The careless, reckless, jovial expression which usually characterized the features of the man had for some weeks given place to a restless, anxious, and, at times, ferocious aspect; like the beast that first finds a sport while the hounds are yet afar, and his limbs are yet strong, in the chase which marks him for his victim, but grows desperate with rage and fear as the day nears its close, and the death-dogs pant hard upon his track: but at that moment, the strong features, with their gnarled muscle and iron sinews, seemed to have lost every sign both of passion and the will, and to be locked in a stolid and dull repose. At last he looked up at Morton, and said, with a smile, like that of an old man in his dotage,—

"I'm thinking that my life has been one mistake. I had talents,—you would not fancy it; but once I was neither a fool nor a villain! Odd, isn't it? Just reach me the brandy."

But Morton, with a slight shudder, turned and left the room.

He walked on mechanically, and gained, at last, the superb *quai* that borders the Seine: there, the passengers became more frequent; gay equipages rolled along; the white and lofty mansions looked fair and stately in the clear, blue sky of early summer; beside him flowed the sparkling river, animated with the painted baths that floated on its surface. Earth was merry and heaven serene; his heart was dark through all. Night within,—Morning beautiful without! At last he paused by that

bridge, stately with the statues of those whom the caprice of time honors with a name; for though Zeus and his gods be overthrown, while earth exists will live the worship of dead men: the bridge by which you pass from the royal Tuileries, or the luxurious streets beyond the Rue de Rivoli, to the Senate of the emancipated people, and the gloomy and desolate grandeur of the Faubourg St. Germain, in whose venerable haunts the impoverished descendants of the old feudal tyrants, whom the birth of the Senate overthrew, yet congregate,—the ghosts of departed powers proud of the shadows of great names. As the English outcast paused midway on the bridge, and for the first time lifting his head from his bosom, gazed around, there broke at once on his remembrance that terrible and fatal evening when, hopeless, friendless, desperate, he had begged for charity of his uncle's hireling, with all the feelings that then (so imperfectly and lightly touched on in his brief narrative to Gawtrey) had raged and blackened in his breast, urging to the resolution he had adopted, casting him on the ominous friendship of the man whose guidance he even then had suspected and distrusted. The spot in either city had had a certain similitude and correspondence each with each: at the first, he had consummated his despair of human destinies; he had dared to forget the Providence of God; he had arrogated his fate to himself,—by the first bridge he had taken his resolve; by the last he stood in awe at the result!—stood no less poor, no less abject, equally in rags and squalor; but was his crest as haughty and his eye as fearless, for was his conscience as free and his honor as unstained? Those arches of stone, those rivers that rolled between, seemed to him then to take a more mystic and typical sense than belongs to the outer world,—they were the bridges to the

rivers of his life. Plunged in thoughts so confused and dim that he could scarcely distinguish, through the chaos, the one streak of light which, perhaps, heralded the reconstruction or regeneration of the elements of his soul; two passengers halted, also, by his side.

"You will be late for the debate," said one of them to the other. "Why do you stop?"

"My friend," said the other, "I never pass this spot without recalling the time when I stood here without a *sou*, or, as I thought, a chance of one, and impiously meditated self-destruction."

"*You!* — now so rich, so fortunate in repute and station! — is it possible? How was it? A lucky chance, a sudden legacy?"

"No; time, faith, and energy, — the three friends God has given to the poor!"

The men moved on; but Morton, who had turned his face towards them, fancied that the last speaker fixed on him his bright, cheerful eye, with a meaning look; and when the man was gone, he repeated those words, and hailed them in his heart of hearts as an augury from above.

Quickly then, and as if by magic, the former confusion of his mind seemed to settle into distinct shapes of courage and resolve. "Yes," he muttered; "I will keep this night's appointment, — I will learn the secret of these men's life. In my inexperience and destitution, I have suffered myself to be led hitherto into a partnership, if not with vice and crime, at least with subterfuge and trick. I awake from my reckless boyhood, — my unworthy palterings with my better self. If Gawtreys be as I dread to find him, if he be linked in some guilty and hateful traffic with that loathsome accomplice, I will —" He paused, for his heart whispered,

"Well, and even so, — the guilty man clothed and fed *thee!*" "I will," resumed his thought, in answer to his heart, — "I will go on my knees to him to fly while there is yet time, to work, beg, starve, perish even, rather than lose the right to look man in the face without a blush, and kneel to his God without remorse!"

And as he thus ended, he felt suddenly as if he himself were restored to the perception and the joy of the nature and the world around him; the NIGHT had vanished from his soul, — he inhaled the balm and freshness of the air; he comprehended the delight which the liberal June was scattering over the earth; he looked above, and his eyes were suffused with pleasure at the smile of the soft, blue skies. The MORNING became, as it were, a part of his own being; and he felt that as the world in spite of the storms is fair, so in spite of evil God is good. He walked on; he passed the bridge, but his step was no more the same, — he forgot his rags. Why should he be ashamed? And thus, in the very flush of this new and strange elation and elasticity of spirit, he came unawares upon a group of young men, lounging before the porch of one of the chief hotels in that splendid Rue de Rivoli, wherein wealth and the English have made their homes. A groom, mounted, was leading another horse up and down the road, and the young men were making their comments of approbation upon both the horses, especially the one led, which was, indeed, of uncommon beauty and great value. Even Morton, in whom the boyish passion of his earlier life yet existed, paused to turn his experienced and admiring eye upon the stately shape and pace of the noble animal, and as he did so, a name too well remembered came upon his ear.

"Certainly, Arthur Beaufort is the most enviable fellow in Europe!"

"Why, yes," said another of the young men; "he has plenty of money, is good-looking, devilish good-natured, clever, and spends like a prince."

"Has the best horses!"

"The best luck at roulette!"

"The prettiest girls in love with him!"

"And no one enjoys life more. Ah! here he is!"

The group parted as a light, graceful figure came out of a jeweller's shop that adjoined the hotel, and halted gayly amongst the loungers. Morton's first impulse was to hurry from the spot; his second impulse arrested his step, and, a little apart, and half-hid beneath one of the arches of the colonnade which adorns the street, the outcast gazed upon the heir. There was no comparison in the natural personal advantages of the two young men; for Philip Morton, despite all the hardships of his rough career, had now grown up and ripened into a rare perfection of form and feature. His broad chest, his erect air, his lithe and symmetrical length of limb, united, happily, the attributes of activity and strength; and though there was no delicacy of youthful bloom upon his dark cheek, and though lines which should have come later marred its smoothness with the signs of care and thought, yet an expression of intelligence and daring, equally beyond his years, and the evidence of hardy, abstemious, vigorous health, served to show to the full advantage the outline of features which, noble and regular, though stern and masculine, the artist might have borrowed for his ideal of a young Spartan arming for his first battle. Arthur, slight to feebleness, and with the paleness, partly of constitution, partly of gay excess, on his fair and clear complexion, had features far

less symmetrical and impressive than his cousin: but what then? All that are bestowed by elegance of dress, the refinements of luxurious habit, the nameless grace that comes from a mind and a manner polished, — the one by literary culture, the other by social intercourse, — invested the person of the heir with a fascination that rude nature alone ever fails to give. And about him there was a gayety, an airiness of spirit, an atmosphere of enjoyment, which bespoke one who is in love with life.

"Why, this is lucky! I'm so glad to see you all!" said Arthur Beaufort, with that silver-ringing tone, and charming smile, which are to the happy spring of man what its music and its sunshine are to the spring of earth. "You must dine with me at Verey's. I want something to rouse me to-day; for I did not get home from the *Salon*<sup>1</sup> till four this morning."

"But you won?"

"Yes, Marsden. Hang it! I always win, — I who could so well afford to lose; I'm quite ashamed of my luck!"

"It is easy to spend what one wins," observed Mr. Marsden, sententiously; "and I see you have been at the jeweller's! A present for Cecile? Well, don't blush, my dear fellow. What is life without women?"

"And wine?" said a second.

"And play?" said a third.

"And wealth?" said a fourth.

"And *you* enjoy them all! Happy fellow!" said a fifth.

The outcast pulled his hat over his brows, and walked away.

<sup>1</sup> The most celebrated gaming-house in Paris in the day before gaming-houses were suppressed by the well-directed energy of the government.



"This dear Paris!" said Beaufort, as his eye carelessly and unconsciously followed the dark form retreating through the arches,—"this dear Paris! I must make the most of it while I stay! I have only been here a few weeks, and next week I must go."

"Pooh!—your health is better: you don't look like the same man."

"You think so, really? Still I don't know: the doctors say that I must either go to the German waters, — the season is begun, — or —"

"Or what?"

"Live less with such pleasant companions, my dear fellow! But as you say, what is life without —"

"Women!"

"Wine!"

"Play!"

"Wealth!"

"Ha! ha! 'Throw physic to the dogs: I'll none of it!'"

And Arthur leaped lightly on his saddle, and as he rode gayly on, humming the favorite air of the last opera, the hoofs of his horse splashed the mud over a foot-passenger halting at the crossing. Morton checked the fiery exclamation rising to his lips; and gazing after the brilliant form that hurried on towards the Champs Elysées, his eye caught the statues on the bridge, and a voice, as of a cheering angel, whispered again to his heart, "TIME, FAITH, ENERGY!"

The expression of his countenance grew calm at once, and, as he continued his rambles, it was with a mind that, casting off the burdens of the past, looked serenely and steadily on the obstacles and hardships of the future. We have seen that a scruple of conscience, or of pride, not without its nobleness, had made him refuse the impor-

tunities of Gawtrety for less sordid raiment; the same feeling made it his custom to avoid sharing the luxurious and dainty food with which Gawtrety was wont to regale himself. For that strange man, whose wonderful felicity of temperament and constitution rendered him, in all circumstances, keenly alive to the hearty and animal enjoyments of life, would still emerge, as the day declined, from their wretched apartment, and, trusting to his disguises, in which indeed he possessed a masterly art, repair to one of the better description of restaurants and feast away his cares for the moment. William Gawtrety would not have cared three straws for the curse of Damocles. The sword over *his* head would never have spoiled his appetite! He had lately, too, taken to drinking much more deeply than he had been used to do, — the fine intellect of the man was growing thickened and dulled; and this was a spectacle that Morton could not bear to contemplate. Yet so great was Gawtrety's vigor of health, that, after draining wine and spirits enough to have despatched a company of fox-hunters, and after betraying, sometimes in uproarious glee, sometimes in maudlin self-bewailings, that he himself was not quite invulnerable to the thyrsus of the god, he would — on any call on his energies, or especially before departing on those mysterious expeditions which kept him from home half, and sometimes all the night — plunge his head into cold water, drink as much of the lymph as a groom would have shuddered to bestow on a horse, close his eyes in a doze for half an hour, and wake, cool, sober, and collected, as if he had lived according to the precepts of Socrates or Cornaro!

But to return to Morton. It was his habit to avoid as much as possible sharing the good cheer of his companion; and now, as he entered the Champs Elysées, he

saw a little family, consisting of a young mechanic, his wife, and two children, who with that love of harmless recreation which yet characterizes the French, had taken advantage of a holiday in the craft, and were enjoying their simple meal under the shadow of the trees. Whether in hunger or in envy, Morton paused and contemplated the happy group. Along the road rolled the equipages and trampled the steeds of those to whom all life is a holiday. *There*, was pleasure, — under those trees was happiness. One of the children, a little boy of about six years old, observing the attitude and gaze of the pausing wayfarer, ran to him, and holding up a fragment of a coarse kind of cake, said to him winningly, "Take it, — I have had enough!" The child reminded Morton of his brother: his heart melted within him, — he lifted the young Samaritan in his arms, and, as he kissed him, wept.

The mother observed and rose also. She laid her hand on his own, "Poor boy! why do you weep? — can we relieve you?"

Now that bright gleam of human nature, suddenly darting across the sombre recollections and associations of his past life, seemed to Morton as if it came from Heaven, in approval and in blessing of this attempt at reconciliation to his fate.

"I thank you," said he, placing the child on the ground, and passing his hand over his eyes, — "I thank you, — yes! Let me sit down amongst you." And he sat down, the child by his side, and partook of their fare, and was merry with them, — the proud Philip! Had he not begun to discover the "precious jewel" in the "ugly and venomous" adversity?

The mechanic, though a gay fellow on the whole, was not without some of that discontent of his station which

is common with his class; he vented it, however, not in murmurs, but in jests. He was satirical on the carriages and the horsemen that passed, and, lolling on the grass, ridiculed his betters at his ease.

"Hush!" said his wife, suddenly; "here comes Madame de Merville;" and rising as she spoke, she made a respectful inclination of her head towards an open carriage that was passing very slowly towards the town.

"Madame de Merville!" repeated the husband, rising also, and lifting his cap from his head. "Ah! I have nothing to say against *her*!"

Morton looked instinctively towards the carriage, and saw a fair countenance turned graciously to answer the silent salutations of the mechanic and his wife, — a countenance that had long haunted his dreams, though of late it had faded away beneath harsher thoughts, the countenance of the stranger whom he had seen at the *bureau* of Gawtrey, when that worthy personage had borne a more mellifluous name. He started and changed color: the lady herself now seemed suddenly to recognize him; for their eyes met, and she bent forward eagerly. She pulled the check-string: the carriage halted, — she beckoned to the mechanic's wife, who went up to the road-side.

"I worked once for that lady," said the man, with a tone of feeling; "and when my wife fell ill last winter she paid the doctors. Ah, she is an angel of charity and kindness!"

Morton scarcely heard this eulogium; for he observed, by something eager and inquisitive in the face of Madame de Merville, and by the sudden manner in which the mechanic's helpmate turned her head to the spot on which he stood, that he was the object of their con-

versation. Once more he became suddenly aware of his ragged dress, and with a natural shame, — a fear that charity might be extended to him from *her*, — he muttered an abrupt farewell to the operative, and, without another glance at the carriage, walked away.

Before he had got many paces, the wife, however, came up to him, breathless. “Madame de Merville would speak to you, sir!” she said, with more respect than she had hitherto thrown into her manner. Philip paused an instant, and again strode on.

“It must be some mistake,” he said, hurriedly: “I have no right to expect such an honor.”

He struck across the road, gained the opposite side, and had vanished from Madame de Merville’s eyes, before the woman regained the carriage. But still that calm, pale, and somewhat melancholy face, presented itself before him; and, as he walked again through the town, sweet and gentle fancies crowded confusedly on his heart. On that soft summer day, memorable for so many silent but mighty events in that inner life which prepares the catastrophes of the outer one, — as in the region of which Virgil has sung the images of men to be born hereafter repose or glide, — on that soft summer day he felt he had reached the age when Youth begins to clothe in some human shape its first vague ideal of desire and love.

In such thoughts, and still wandering, the day wore away, till he found himself in one of the lanes that surround that glittering Microcosm of the vices, the frivolities, the hollow show, and the real beggary of the gay city, — the gardens and the galleries of the Palais Royal. Surprised at the lateness of the hour, — it was then on the stroke of seven, — he was about to return homewards, when the loud voice of Gawtrety sounded

behind, and that personage, tapping him on the back, said, —

“Hollo, my young friend, well met! This will be a night of trial to you. Empty stomachs produce weak nerves. Come along! you must dine with me. A good dinner and a bottle of old wine, — come! nonsense, I say you shall come! *Vive la joie!*”

While speaking, he had linked his arm in Morton's, and hurried him on several paces in spite of his struggles; but just as the words *Vive la joie* left his lips, he stood still and mute, as if a thunderbolt had fallen at his feet; and Morton felt that heavy arm shiver and tremble like a leaf. He looked up, and just at the entrance of that part of the Palais Royal in which are situated the restaurants of Verey and Vefour, he saw two men standing but a few paces before them, and gazing full on Gawtreys and himself.

“It is my evil genius,” muttered Gawtreys, grinding his teeth.

“And mine!” said Morton.

The younger of the two men thus apostrophized made a step towards Philip, when his companion drew him back and whispered, “What are you about? Do you know that young man?”

“He is my cousin; Philip Beaufort's natural son!”

“Is he? — then discard him forever. He is with the most dangerous knave in Europe!”

As Lord Lilburne — for it was he — thus whispered his nephew, Gawtreys strode up to him, and, glaring full in his face, said in a deep and hollow tone: “There is a hell, my lord, — I go to drink to our meeting!” Thus saying, he took off his hat with a ceremonious mockery, and disappeared within the adjoining restaurant kept by Vefour.

"A *hell!*" said Lilburne, with his frigid smile; "the rogue's head runs upon *gambling-houses!*"

"And I have suffered Philip again to escape me," said Arthur, in self-reproach: for while Gawtreys had addressed Lord Lilburne, Merton had plunged back amidst the labyrinth of alleys. "How have I kept my oath?"

"Come! your guests must have arrived by this time. As for that wretched young man, depend upon it that he is corrupted body and soul."

"But he is my own cousin."

"Pooh! there is no relationship in natural children: besides, he will find you out fast enough. Ragged claimants are not long too proud to beg."

"You speak in earnest?" said Arthur, irresolutely.

"Ay! trust my experience of the world, — *allons!*"

And in a cabinet of the very restaurant adjoining that in which the solitary Gawtreys gorged his conscience, Lilburne, Arthur, and their gay friends, soon forgetful of all but the roses of the moment, bathed their airy spirits in the dews of the mirthful wine. Oh, extremes of life! Oh, Night! Oh, Morning!